

lang="en">

Key of the Sunken Moon - Volume 02

Table of Contents

- 1. [Fan Tong's Foreword](#)
- 2. [Chapter 1: Boss, We'll Be Taking All the Chicken](#)
- 3. [Chapter 2: Flashing Lights are Prohibited](#)
- 4. [Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, Oh, Chicken Skins Too](#)
- 5. [Chapter 4: So This is My... Weapon...?](#)
- 6. [Chapter 5: Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other's Houses](#)
- 7. [Chapter 6: Daily Routines](#)
- 8. [Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don't Be Like This, Owner! Don't Run Away!](#)
- 9. [Personal Account: Wei Shi](#)
- 10. [Character Profiles \(Yue Tui Version\)](#)

Fan Tong's Foreword

On December 26, 2012, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [No Comments](#)

I just wanted to clear up the events that have happened so far. I know everyone's forgetful. I am too.

My name is Fan Tong, Hmm— At least this isn't something that's easily forgotten. That's the good part about my name. I died for some reason, and came to a world called Huan Shi. Currently, I live here as a New Resident of The Eastern City. I was a total star after coming here, amazing everyone around me. Because I was exceptionally talented, my skills improved rapidly each day. Everyone adored and respected me, and thousands of young girls held crushes on me. I can be considered one of the most famous celebrities in The Eastern City nowadays. My future is unlimited and my charisma unequaled...

Okay, I know. No one would believe that. Even I wouldn't believe what I'd just said. I just wanted to satisfy myself a bit, you know. It's not like it bothered anyone, did it? Everyone dreams of becoming an important figure and becoming great by following their dreams. Is there really a need to keep reminding me of my tragic fate by mentioning that eyesore of a white tassel?

Let me start over. I'm Fan Tong, and I only found out I died after coming here. I've been deemed talentless in Shufa, and Wushu just isn't a match for me. I think the only subject worth studying would be Fuzhou. Black, purple, red, blue, green, white. As of now, I hold the lowest of them all, a white tassel that indicates I am useless and have no salary. I have died five times in this world so far and now hold a debt of one hundred ninety-five strings. My first friend is called Yue Tui. We both live in dorm room 444, along with another roommate called Zhu Sha.

There's something important on top of this. I'm currently single and have very few female friends. I don't look for much. If you're a kind, understanding person that can withstand my irregular speech, we can tie the knot with each other. I'm being serious.

What am I doing now? Some companions and I are trying to kill chickens along with the people in Resource Area 1. Why do we have to kill chickens? Because we need their feathers and skin. Don't correct my idiom. This is humor, humor! Fan Tong-style humor!

According to my precise calculations, if we're to all finish this honorable chicken-killing mission, we must kill one thousand two hundred chickens. Yet, we haven't progressed through even a fraction of the task as not even one chicken has been killed. We've got a denominator without a numerator. The situation is perilous.

As for our comrades, there's this pretty girl called Bi Rou who stood up against the evil forces who were bullying us, and she... called for help. She didn't look like she was going to fight with them herself, but it's fine calling for backup. It's just that the person who'd arrived... looking at him from any perspective, he's just a bit too odd, isn't he?

In all honesty, I'm really grateful this person decided to teleport here using Shufa. As for being killed by a beast trampling all over you, I don't want to experience it a second time.

If your riding skills suck, don't try it! If you can't control a beast, don't bring it out! If he really did ride the moshou here, according to everyone's level of luck here, I can still say I'd still be the one to get hit and die. That's why stupid actions like that should not be allowed.

Alright, the expert is here now. Does our glorious chicken mission have hope now?

Next: [Chapter 1: Boss, We'll Be Taking All the Chicken](#)

Previous: [Author's Note](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

← [Chapter 1: Boss, We'll Be Taking All the Chicken Author's Note](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

Chapter 1: Boss, We'll Be Taking All the Chicken

On December 26, 2012, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiaoyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [9 Comments](#)

“This is like using a chainsaw just to kill chickens...” -Fan Tong
“Ah, that’s not true. I’m using a fruit knife.” -Yin Shi

Resource Area 1, where the usual orderly atmosphere had turned into a chaotic ruckus about some matter concerning chickens, returned to its ambiance again the moment Yin Shi appeared at its source.

Well, actually, chaos had yet to ensue, but Yin Shi’s appearance had acted as a warning that told everyone this fight could not happen. That is, unless there really were people that dense.

The first time Fan Tong saw Yin Shi was outside the city gates. Technically, that didn’t count since he died before really seeing the guy. The second time was during Chen Yue Jie. He only thought he looked really handsome and a bit strange then. This was the third time now. Seeing him from this distance, he could only describe his feelings as... plaintive.

Yin Shi was so handsome that other men wouldn’t think twice before murdering him, simply so he wouldn’t steal the attention of every woman under the sun. As long as this man existed, Fan Tong didn’t know what to do with his life. Even if he did try attacking, it’s pretty obvious who’d be the one killed... Ability aside, fate had always been on the side of handsome men. You’d figure out how biased it was purely by looking at the other person’s face.

Comparing looks alone, Yue Tui’s points were up there as well, but he’s just not the type. Plus he hadn’t finished growing, so he’s not exactly in Fan Tong’s range of enemies. Not to mention, men aren’t supposed to crowd out their friends. Fan Tong tended to respect his father’s teachings.

“Yin Shi, I missed you so much...”

By the time Bi Rou raised her head from Yin Shi’s embrace, her eyes were shot

red at a very good degree. It was at a level not too horrible to make her face look appalling, but it didn't look artificial either, as though done to attract attention. Her expression, now filled with apparent grievance from unjust treatment, looked so natural there was no way to tell it was only an act she forged the past few seconds.

This woman is not simple. Never get on her bad side. Fan Tong marked Bi Rou as dangerous in his heart.

"Ah! Why are you crying? Who bullied you?"

Very naturally Yin Shi soothed the hair on Bi Rou's head, feeling a bit frantic seeing her pink-tinted eyes.

"People keep stealing our chicken and wouldn't let us collect feathers and skins to level up..."

Bi Rou leaned onto Yin Shi as she said it, as though she needed his comforting. From what Fan Tong could see, though, she seemed to be feeling him up quite blissfully.

"How long have they known each other?"

Zhu Sha calmly turned towards Cute Girl A to ask.

"Hm? They probably met on Chen Yue Jie, I'm assuming. So... for two days?"

Cute Girls A and B stared drunkenly at Yin Shi's beautiful face with pink cheeks, continuously exchanging chatter along the lines of "He's so handsome!" and "I'm so jealous" with each other. They replied half-heartedly to Zhu Sha's question.

Two... days... Huh?...

The one who asked the question made no comment, but Fan Tong felt somewhat perplexed.

They were so attached to each other after only two days? Can two days make people this close?

Where was justice!

Fan Tong dropped tears for his own life, which had remained single until the

day he died.

Is it right to shine so brightly in front of a bunch of bachelors? Is it right? Is this legal...?

“Fan Tong...”

Probably because his shocked expression was too blatantly obvious, Yue Tui looked at him with worry.

“Yue Tui, have you ever had a boyfriend...”

“Eh?”

Yue Tui’s expression dimmed. No man would look better from hearing that.

I meant girlfriend. Sorry.

“I... Why, why would I have a boyfriend? Fan Tong, just what’re you pointing at?”

Someone explain for me! Or lend me some paper and pencils! After learning for so long, Yue Tui should understand the word girlfriend by now, right! No, this word should be in the list of crucial-to-learn vocabulary!

Fortunately Zhu Sha didn’t notice their conversation, and Cute Girls A and B were still drunk in their happy pool of eye-alcohol, so he managed not to destroy his image that badly.

As for the couple on the other side, they had probably been in their own world from the beginning and couldn’t see anyone else. Ah, maybe there still were chickens, but chickens weren’t humans anyways.

“Ah, what chicken? How about I catch them for you?”

“There’s no need to catch them. Just kill and we’ll skin and pluck them afterwards...”

“But I’m scared I can’t defeat them.”

“You can kill them with just one finger...”

“Ah, if you’re watching, I’ll be able to do anything.”

“Mhm mhm, Yin Shi, I will cheer you on!”

.....

Stop flirting. It's destroying my health...

"So, where are the chickens? Take me to them."

Yin Shi completely neglected the New Residents who'd frozen since seeing him and now looked ready to start killing chickens.

"They're here. One's right in front there, see."

Locking their target, they looked ready to begin the chicken-murdering mission. Cute Girls A and B were still in a daze from seeing Yin Shi's face, and Yue Tui was still troubled by the boyfriend question earlier. Fan Tong's mood had fallen to the pits. Only Zhu Sha was in condition, looking like he was ready to kill the chickens as well.

"Alright, let's kill it."

Though that chicken was some distance from them, no one rushed up to take it from them this time.

Are you kidding, the prey Shufa Xuan's rector had laid his eyes on, who'd dare to take it?

"Lord Yin Shi!"

Around this time, some girl from the surrounding crowd finally couldn't contain herself and screamed.

"As rector of Shufa Xuan, to personally meddle with student affairs and help a student level up, this is a violation of the rules, isn't it!"

Just say it if you're jealous, geez. Such an ugly face... Fan Tong muttered inside. Albeit he also felt uncomfortable seeing other people so touchy-feely with each other, he still hoped to kill his chickens and level up successfully.

"You guys want to level up?"

Yin Shi only heard this now and looked at them, a bit surprised.

No, you're not going to not help us now, are you?

"Yeah, we're all here to collect feathers and skin to level up."

“And I thought you had a grudge... Then we can just go back and rip some pillows?”

You're smart. You still didn't fully answer that girl's question, though. And who'd hold a grudge against chickens for no reason?

“I want to kill them!”

It seemed Bi Rou had her chickens taken from her too many times and developed a form of resentment against chickens, so she disapproved of the pillow idea.

“Okay, we'll go kill chickens then. Let's go.”

This gentleman here, you're too much of a pushover! Be firmer in your beliefs! Did you know it's a thousand two hundred chickens that you'd have to kill? You didn't even count, did you! Or are you just planning on finishing your Rou's portion and that's it!

“Lord Yin Shi...”

That female student refused to give up. Yin Shi casually gave her an impassive response just to get it over with.

“Was it a rule that the rector of Shufa Xuan can't help students level up? Then we'll change it from today on my orders.”

“How can this be...”

“Ah, so annoying. Am I the rector or are you?”

Yin Shi grumbled, then took off the stone accessory hanging on him. He didn't do anything fancy and just threw the thing into the air. It floated to mid-air and an illusory sigil formed, displaying clearly in the sky.

“Charm of Yin Shi, Restriction Order. From now on, only I can touch the chicken. Everyone else who touches one will have points taken off. This restriction will automatically lift after I leave. Alright, fellow students, there's no luck with the chickens for you today. Hurry and go away to do something else, okay.”

...Ah? What's this?

Fan Tong couldn't really understand what this means or what it was that Yin Shi did. Not many with them understood, but those bothersome students looked outraged. Yet, they decided not to come up with arguments and left.

"Yin Shi, Yin Shi. What was that?"

The best person to ask was undoubtedly Bi Rou. Everyone was curious, and Bi Rou was no exception. Especially for things they'd never seen before, they would want to learn more about.

"This? A toy the five Attendants all have."

Looked like there was little hope of receiving a proper explanation from Yin Shi.

"Eh? Can you lend it to me to play with?"

Miss Bi Rou, your curiosity is at a dangerous level. Please don't do things that'd trouble others. I feel frightened from imagining what'd happen with that thing in your hands.

"Ah, I want to too, but Ying would get mad."

Lord Yin Shi, to mention another woman's name while rejecting your woman's request, that's a major failure no matter how you look at it.

"Hmph..."

As expected, Bi Rou made a disgruntled expression right away, but she didn't argue unreasonably.

"I've finished setting up the place. Let's get moving then, shall we, Xiao Rou?"

Whatever you say... I still kind of hope everyone can just go back and buy some pillows... is this idea really off the list now?

So, the first to be entered into their battle record was the chicken standing up there with a blank look on its face.

The slow reaction times of these chickens made Fan Tong question how they survived and hadn't become extinct. Maybe they breed too quickly? But for a chicken to grow this big, how many days does it take?

As Yin Shi elegantly moved towards the chicken, everyone anticipated quite excitedly what kind of move he'd use.

Would it be a flamboyant outrageous Shufa attack, or a swift kill? As an expert with a pure-black tassel, he must have mind-boggling skills, right?

Of course all these—whether expectations or beliefs—were opinions. When Yin Shi nimbly whipped out a fruit knife and smoothly charged to battle the chicken, almost everyone realized how reality often differs from imagination and learned the feeling of having their dreams shattered.

“Hiyah!”

He gripped the fruit knife and did a good deal of poking. Yin Shi actually looked serious—he even had the correct atmosphere and everything—, so Fan Tong didn't know if he could call it a proper job or not. The only thing is that, despite striking effectively, none of his attacks hit the chicken's vital points. He dodged every attack the chicken shot at him, too. It was difficult to discern whether Yin Shi was strong or weak.

By the time he finished off one chicken, ten minutes had passed. Fan Tong truly felt that Yin Shi wasn't here to kill chickens at all, but to play with them.

“A fruit knife...?”

Zhu Sha said, unable to withhold his words. Finally a normal person spoke.

“Ah, I wanted to try out different types of weapons. I found a wood axe inconvenient to carry around last time, so I'm trying out a fruit knife now.”

No one wants you to explain this. What we want you to explain isn't this at all, aghhhh!

As one of the Five Attendants, as rector of Shufa Xuan, don't you have a better weapon?! Take it out here and show us! Where's the talking weapon? That's a combo bound to be found with legendary fighters, isn't it?!

“Ah—Your blade handling is wonderful, Yin Shi—!”

And here stood a woman who shrieked out praises no matter the nonsense. *Hello, a successful man always has a wise woman behind him. Miss Bi Rou, how can he become successful with you spoiling him like this?*

“Ten minutes a chicken. 12,000 minutes for 1,200 chickens. We’ll need to kill for two hundred hours.”

Zhu Sha coolly added, which made Fan Tong suddenly realize that someone other than himself had been calculating the efficiency of this. Here he was thinking everyone was too dumb to realize such an obvious fact. Who knew Zhu Sha was really paying attention?

But he did come to help out, so you should speak a bit more amicably, Zhu Sha.

“Yin Shi, we won’t make it for dinner at this rate. Could you be a bit faster?”

Bi Rou used her killer move again: begging with soft words. Regarding her mention of dinner, though, Fan Tong had something to say.

Supposing dinner was at six, they were left with only three hours.

Killing 1,200 chickens in three hours meant 400 an hour. Four hundred an hour meant 6.6 or 6.7 chickens per minute, which also meant a bit more than one chicken per second.

Is this possible? Is this possible? This excludes the time needed to find chickens too. Is this really possible? Or could it be that pure black tassels can make water into wine and the impossible possible?

If Yin Shi managed to do it, Fan Tong sincerely believed he’d become a legend. Granted, the title “Quickest Chicken Killer” might not be entirely appealing, and it wouldn’t fare well for him if it spreads, either...

Besides, we’re just going back to eat those government provisions. What’s the rush to a dinner like that?

“This student, I’ve felt your gaze for a while now...”

Yin Shi turned to look at Fan Tong all of a sudden, looking a tad suspicious.

“I feel discontent in your gaze. Do we know each other?”

Everyone’s eyes focused on Fan Tong.

Bi Rou’s look was simple enough to figure out. It basically said, “What are you unhappy about with such a good man? Are you blind?” The others’ were

comparably purer. They just made faces.

“When I first got here, Lord Yin Shi, you trampled over me with that beast you were riding.”

Since he’d already asked, Fan Tong might as well admit the truth. He didn’t look like someone who’d get mad easily, so there’s nothing wrong in saying it.

What’s important is the compensation! Do I have any hope of receiving any?

“Ah, did you die?”

Yin Shi was slightly surprised. Yet, he didn’t ask for the time or location and habitually asked this question.

Mind if I ask, do you run around riding dangerous monsters all the time? So this kind of thing has happened many times before already?

Fan Tong nodded. Whenever possible, as long as he didn’t forget, he would answer with nods and head shakes.

“I’m so sorry. I can’t let you vent it out by killing me back, but how about I compensate you for the fees required for regeneration? Are three thousand strings enough?”

While Yin Shi spoke, he took out a ticket and scribbled the amount. It was similar to a check, but it would only be used for exchanges of large amounts of money.

Hearing the amount, Fan Tong was utterly stupefied.

Three thousand strings!

Three thousand strings—!

I didn’t hear wrong, did I? Is it really three thousand? Did he account for the psychological damage too? Lord Yin Shi, you are my god! From now on I am your follower!

Fan Tong delightedly opened his palms to receive the ticket, but Bi Rou stepped before him to stop the arrangement.

“Yin Shi! Each regeneration only costs one hundred strings! Don’t waste so much money. It’s not that expensive!”

.....

That's his money, not yours, why do you care so much? Who'd want to marry you if you act like this even before the wedding? Blocking someone else's path to prosperity is immoral, you know!

"Not to mention, the first three revivals are free! Fan Tong just arrived so that must've been within the first three?"

Ahhhhh! You are now my sworn enemy for life! Yes, that death didn't cost anything, but how could you, how could you say it out loud?!

"Eh? Is that how it is?"

As expected, Yin Shi didn't understand the situation. Having lived in the Eastern City for so long, he still didn't know something as important as the price for revivals. This could only be explained by how Natural Residents didn't understand the pains of society. New Residents were truly living in deep waters and scorching fires.

"Then... Here, Xiao Rou, this is for you. I forgot to give you some money last time. Is three thousand enough? Should I write another one?"

"Mm mm, more than enough. You're so nice to me, Yin Shi."

Ahhhhh! You she-devil—! May you rot in hell for taking another man's money —!

After seeing three thousand strings of money that could've belonged to him enter someone else's pockets instead, Fan Tong filled his heart with tears of blood. Those feelings were not something that could not be described.

So pretty girls don't have to do anything to get three thousand strings, but he can't even receive compensation for being murdered. No matter how you look at it, it's tragic.

"It'd be nice if you could at least give me a hundred strings..."

Probably the curse felt the thirst of his soul, so it allowed him to say something normal. Sadly, it was in vain.

"The first three deaths are warnings for you to be careful, so I won't be taking this into account."

Yin Shi had no ill intentions and simply stated the truth. It seemed receiving recompense was hopeless now.

I know I was being careless and didn't dodge, but don't you feel responsible for leaving someone dead out in the streets at all—?!

"It's ugly to keep asking for money."

Zhu Sha stabbed him with this sentence, quickly and cruelly.

"Fan Tong, how about I work with you to repay your debt? I don't really need money right now anyways."

Yue Tui patted his shoulders as comfort, his words gentle as usual.

Wahhh, Yue Tui, you're really the best. I knew you're my only friend...

Using friends to make money isn't something a real man would do, but my father had once said, "When you truly need something, don't reject it for pride." That's why, I'm going to accept your offer whole-heartedly...

"Your relationship is wonderful. Good luck with work." Bi Rou smiled at them, her smile still sweet.

I don't need the encouragement of some filthy rich woman who's just stolen three thousand strings from me! Cheering us on? Stop acting!

The money was optional, but the chickens they must kill. It was the opposite for Fan Tong though. He didn't have to kill the chickens, but he needed the money. He was going to remember those three thousand strings for a very long time. A debtor tended to be more sensitive about money.

Pale greens received a monthly salary of two strings, and grass greens received three. If he finished collecting feathers and skins today and leveled up to grass green, he'd still have to wait one thousand months before he reached three thousand strings. Although he just needed 195 strings, those three thousand had been within his grasp! That changed everything! What he could have done with three thousand strings! What kind of luxurious life he would have been able to lead!

Hate floated around Fan Tong but, possibly because his spiritual abilities

weren't strong enough, his mood failed to affect the entire group.

Because everyone else messed around with no regards to time, Fan Tong started paying attention to the carcass of that chicken over there.

With a "safe in my purse" mentality, Fan Tong decided to skin and pluck the chickens for himself. He had known that he would be killing chickens today, so he had brought some plain tools with him. They were even borrowed from other people since his financial situation honestly gave him no luck with anything that required money.

Yet when he touched a chicken and got ready to slice it, the sky buzzed, then thundered. From Fan Tong's viewpoint, he only saw this blanket of extremely bright light before his entire body felt numbing pain. He wasn't sure at all what had happened.

Whatever happened here was quite close to the others, so naturally they saw everything. The first to speak was Zhu Sha.

"What horrible deed have you done to be struck by lightning?"

So he was struck by lightning. How come he didn't die? Well, not dying is better, but... that's not how it goes, right?

He had just wanted to make sure he had enough skins and possibly pocket some for himself while no one was watching. Was this so horrible that the heavens even struck him down with light? There were no storm clouds in the sky though, so this wasn't just some coincidence but rather a punishment from the heavens?

"Fan Tong, should we send you back to heal..."

Yue Tui panicked upon seeing his sorry state. The two cute girls also felt he didn't look very well and nodded. Zhu Sha though, added a few more words.

"I heard the Eastern City's health resources are reserved for Natural Residents alone. All New Residents are killed off. It's faster to just regenerate."

"Ah."

Yin Shi suddenly screamed, seeming to have recalled something.

"I said no one's allowed to touch the chickens aside from me..."

.....

So he had been struck by Yin Shi's spell. This is what one calls dying by the hands of one's own people. Alright, he wasn't dead, but his current situation wasn't much better.

Lord Yin Shi, couldn't you have been more earnest when casting the spell? Did you plan on collecting the feathers and skins all by yourself?

"Yin Shi, are you going to help us pluck and skin too? That's a lot of work! Why don't you change it? Just leave that stuff to us."

Bi Rou looked all hurt and didn't want to tire him out. On that note, he had only killed one chicken so far.

"That sounds good too. Then I'll change it a bit... Ah! Wait, someone's calling me."

When he was about to take out the accessory and rewrite the restriction, his communication charm lit up. He picked it up.

"I'm outside. Ah, what? I forgot. I... Okay, I got it. I'll be back in a bit."

Sounded like something urgent. He said he's going back already, so it looked like the chickens wouldn't be killed today.

If that's the case, can we just go back and buy some pillows?

"Yin Shi, you're leaving?"

Bi Rou looked very disappointed.

"Xiao Rou, I'm sorry. I promised that I'd go welcome the New Residents at the Chen Yue pathway today."

So you're going there to capture more people? This does sound like something important.

"Yeah..."

Bi Rou puckered her lips, her gaze leaking feelings of dismay. Normally, a man would have wavered around now, and the chance he'd drop the other business was very high.

"I want to be with you too, but if I go back on my promise, Ying will get mad at

me.”

That is, if he didn't have a scary woman behind him.

What complicated relationship is this? What polygonal shape does it take? Or is this a wife versus affair situation?

“Then go. We'll work hard.”

Bi Rou's eyes flickered with an unnoticeable flash of jealousy when Yin Shi mentioned the Queen. She replied like that out of spite.

“Ah, but I'll worry. Let me get someone to help you guys out, okay? Wait a bit for me.”

Saying this, Yin Shi used his communication charm and contacted someone.

A substitute? Is the pillow dream shattered?

“It's me. You've got nothing to do, right? Come and help out my Xiao Rou. I have to return and prepare to go to the Chen Yue pathway. Hurry here. Oh, bring communication charms with you too.”

Who knows who he was talking to. The conversation ended quickly, and now it was time to wait for the other person to arrive. Fan Tong wondered how long it'd take.

“Lord Yin Shi, do you happen to know any healing spells?”

Yue Tui spoke to Yin Shi and looked at Fan Tong. Really, after being struck by lightning, it's quite hard waiting for one's wounds to heal without any bandaging or help.

Fortunately it wasn't real lightning and thunder, or his clothes would have been burnt to ashes as well. Fan Tong's clothes had only gotten some new holes in them. He looked at his skin, and some places were sort of black. If he deduced the situation using his name, he'd be what you call a rice crust. What an uncomfortable feeling.

“No, I can't learn them. Ah, I should start bringing medicine with me from now on? What if my Xiao Rou got hurt?”

Yin Shi started worrying about something that hadn't happened as he replied.

Fan Tong truly felt the worthlessness of his own life.

But, can't learn...? This really perked one's curiosity, but Fan Tong was someone that had been deemed a person with zero talent in Shufa, so he probably wouldn't understand even if he tried to figure it out, right?

"Why can't you learn?"

Zhu Sha was undoubtedly being his studious self and asked straightaway. Perhaps he wanted to understand more about the topic, just in case he couldn't learn it later on either.

"It would be unfair if I could learn it, now wouldn't it? Ah, it's a personal problem anyways. Only I'm like this. No matter what I do, I can't learn it. I feel very regretful about it too; it would be quite interesting if I could use healing Shufa. That way, we'd just need one chicken. I can just keep regenerating its cells so that the feathers and skin grow, and then everyone would have enough."

Lord Yin Shi, are you sure healing Shufa has those capabilities? May I ask how long it takes for them to grow? Is it your fetish to be as inefficient as possible? Also, the poor chicken!

After ending the topic regarding healing Shufa, the person that Yin Shi called over had arrived, quite quickly if one might say.

However, when that person mysteriously entered from a Fuzhou, everyone saw his perfect countenance, and most of them felt like they were leaving the commoner's dimension.

"I was napping. You better have something important to say, or I'll leave your dead body to rot."

The long-haired beauty spoke venomously and with an angry expression. Everyone recognized the face. The charcoal colored tassel and blue-black jade accessory also confirmed his identity.

One of The Eastern City's Five Attendants, rector of Fuzhou Xuan – Ling Shi.

We're just here to kill chickens! Just to kill chickens! Must we make such a huge commotion? Is this how you waste your valuable human resources? The

tassels on your bodies are crying!

Is this what you call nepotism! Even though Lord Yin Shi wasn't discriminating anyone, but it certainly feels that way! Are we going to meet the Queen next?

"Ling Shi, I'm going back now. You go and help the others kill the chickens."

You're doomed Lord Yin Shi, you won't have a burial for your funeral.

"You really aren't scared of me killing you and hanging your decapitated head on the city gates to show everyone?"

Ling Shi's beautiful face turned sour for a moment. Fan Tong didn't know if he should anticipate or fear the clash. It must be exciting to watch two professions fight, but if commoners like them got involved, the consequences were unimaginable.

"No, you won't do that. I know you've got a soft heart on the inside, hahahahah."

"....."

Ling Shi felt helpless towards Yin Shi's fearless face. To deal with someone so shameless, Ling Shi couldn't think of what to do.

"Ah, right, Ling Shi. I got a new waist-pad, look."

Yin Shi declared as he showed off the wood-colored* accessory as if it was his precious treasure.

"This isn't called a waist-pad. It's a jade plate."

"I kept losing mine, so I got them to make it from plain rock this time. It looks pretty good, right? It won't be as wasteful this way too."

"Even if it's made from rock, it's still called a stone plate, not a waist-pad..."

"I wonder how long the waist-pad would last this time? I hope I won't lose it anymore. I should make the tassel into a bracelet later too, so I won't lose it so easily. What do you think?"

"....."

They couldn't communicate.

Fan Tong felt Ling Shi was about to scream “Who cares about your waist-pad!” or something similar, but Yin Shi switched topics incredibly quickly and started talking about something else.

“Ling Shi, this is my Xiao Rou. She’s beautiful, isn’t she?”

I feel like this introduction sounds like the one you used for your waist-pad.

“Lord Ling Shi looks better than I do.”

Bi Rou seemed a bit uneasy. That’s true, when you’re in front of such a beauty, it’s not unnatural to feel a little suffocated.

“Really? But I think you’re more beautiful. Ever since I saw you I thought Ling Shi looked really ugly. Plus I’m quite tired of seeing that face.”

Yin Shi spoke but suddenly he felt his throat ache from speaking too much perhaps. He rubbed his neck.

“Take it.”

Ling Shi casually threw a cup of water over. Who knew where it came from.

At this time, Bi Rou gave her roommate a look. Cute Girl B spoke.

“Lord Yin Shi, are you and Lord Ling Shi a couple?”

“...Wha! Cough cough cough! Cough cough!”

Yin Shi choked horribly from the water and Ling Shi instantly put on a frightening expression. The only thing they both shared was the look of disgust in their eyes.

“Who would... Cough! Who’d want to with this old geezer! Ah, that’s disgusting!”

Huh?

Everyone staggered.

“Isn’t Lord Ling female... I just thought her voice was slightly deep...”

“I’m a man.”

Whoa! Mi Zhong you pervert! You knew he was male since the beginning, didn’t you! No wonder you were so troubled about your sexual orientation!

“S-sorry. It’s just that you two always went everywhere together and seemed to be on really good terms with each other that everyone thought...”

What do you mean, everyone? Don’t pull me down with you.

“Even if Yin Shi was female, I wouldn’t want to be with him.”

Ling Shi icily asserted, his mood perfectly destroyed.

This sort of misunderstanding happened quite often actually. Things like “Lord Yin Shi is so handsome,” “Then what do you think of Lord Ling Shi?”, and “Ah? Isn’t Lord Ling Shi female?”, he’s heard them so much that he got used to it. But it didn’t mean that he wouldn’t be unhappy though.

“Ah, how mean.”

Lord Yin Shi, what are you dissatisfied with? If your appearance didn’t change and you just changed into a girl, that’d be quite scary. I mean, at least Ling Shi has a ton of male admirers despite being a guy. He has the right to be conceited, you know.”

After finding out Ling Shi’s gender and clarifying the relationship he and Yin Shi had together, Bi Rou’s expression brightened up, as though she had just got rid of a giant boulder.

Since the conversation have strayed to this topic, Fan Tong had the urge to ask something. It was a bit rude, but he still wanted to know.

“Uhm, excuse me, your responsibilities with the Queen, do they include sleeping with her?”

Horray! I’m so lucky the Queen didn’t change into the Emperor or something! One’s luck really does change after being bad for so long!

The reason Fan Tong asked was because he seriously suspected this. From the looks of it now, the Five Attendants were all good-looking young men. It’s been rumored that the missing Hui Shi is very handsome, and Wei Shi couldn’t fare any worse. It’s as if it’s the Queen’s imperial harem. Furthermore, they lived inside the palace.

Okay, let’s exclude Luo Shi. He’s the Queen’s son, so that’s improbable.

When Fan Tong asked, the two looked shocked, even fearful.

“We don’t have such functions... No! I mean, there’s no such thing!”

Lord Ling Shi, your first sentence sounded very peculiar.

“Ying wouldn’t ask for something so outrageous. We’ve watched her grow up.”

Lord Ling Shi, you seem to want to remain composed, but the discord inside your heart is flowing out from your eyes.

Huh? Wait.

Watched her grow up...?

“How old are you two?”

Zhu Sha asked even before Fan Tong got to it. True, this question deserves some deep thinking. It made people curious.

“Ah, I don’t know. I never counted.”

Yin Shi genuinely replied. To be honest, that answer was quite horrifying.

“There’s no need to pry further into such matters.”

Ling Shi didn’t look like he wanted to answer. *Then again, Lord Ling Shi, even your companion’s calling you an old geezer, so your age can’t be any younger...*

If they really had lived for such a long time, how’d they keep their youth? So to say, what’s the lifespan of the Natural Residents here? What does the old form look like?

“Ah!”

Yin Shi suddenly screamed. Ling Shi glanced towards him, speaking expressionlessly.

“Have you remembered the time?”

“Ahhhhhh—”

Yin Shi looked at the angle of the sun and made some frantic noises. He turned to Bi Rou.

“Xiao Rou, I’m sorry. I won’t make it in time if I don’t go back now. I’m leaving.”

“You already can’t make it.”

Ling Shi spoke without a care on the side. He didn't bother to remind Yin Shi of the time earlier. He's a bit evil.

Because he was in a hurry, Yin Shi didn't have the heart to react to Ling Shi's words and simply cast a spell using Shufa. He was shrouded by light and disappeared. How fast. Only his arrival and departure made people think he was of master-level.

They were now left with Ling Shi, who was unacquainted with anyone and seemed to have a sterner personality. The place immediately quieted down, but Ling Shi proceeded to take out the communication charms Yin Shi told him to bring. It appeared he was about to pass them out.

"I'll set them up for you. Names?"

He began with Cute Girl A, who was standing closest to him, configuring charms for each person. The ones he brought were the same as the one Bi Rou was using earlier. They were shaped like badges. It seemed entering the names registers ownership with the device. Maybe their names would show up when they contact one another in the future?

But... to have Fuzhou Xuan's rector personally give them communication charms, what generosity was this? It's highly likely he made them himself too, huh? God...

A Fuzhoucommunication device hand-crafted by Lord Ling Shi himself, how much would it sell for? Mi Zhong would buy it from him even if he would go bankrupt from it, wouldn't he?

"Name?"

Very quickly, it was Fan Tong's turn. Ling Shi calmly stared at him and frowned. He didn't wait for an answer before speaking again.

"I still remember. Fan Tong, wasn't it?"

"No."

Ah! Lord Ling Shi remembering my name actually shocked me so much that I forgot to nod! This is not good!

“No? Did I get your surname wrong? Is it instead?”

Ling Shi arched his brow and spoke blandly.

Lord Ling Shi, you are hilarious. No matter what happened, I wouldn't change my surname to something that'd dig my grave for me. However you look at it, being a rice bucket is better than being a toilet. Although you graciously explained that you might've forgotten, your tone of voice oozed with the confidence that your memory wasn't wrong at all.

“Fan Tong, can't you just be more honest?”

Zhu Sha was annoyed at how Fan Tong always acted this way.

Hahh, what would you know. You wouldn't understand this Youth Depression I now suffer from due to having a mouth like this. Don't ask me what that is. I don't really know either.

“Are you too nervous in front of Lord Ling Shi?”

Even now Yue Tui put the blame of his spoken mishaps onto his nervousness.

Who's nervous! I'm not Mi Zhong! No matter how good-looking, there's no value to it if he's a guy!

“Take this, Fan Tong.”

Ling Shi didn't say much. He entered Fan Tong's name and handed the charm to him. Fan Tong was quite happy having received a communication charm for free, especially since it's more than likely priceless.

“...Huh?”

When Ling Shi took out a communication charm again, he furrowed his brows.

“Yin Shi, that guy told me to bring seven...”

Those who were quick to react noticed the problem. Those who had slower reaction speed began to realize something strange a few seconds later.

Not counting Ling Shi, there were only six people here. Even if they replaced Bi Rou's charm with a new one, they'd still only need six.

“Had he seen a ghost?”

To have counted such a small number wrong, Yin Shi's truly a marvel.

However, Lord Ling Shi, what you're saying is a bit impolite. To be precise, everyone here is a ghost. It's just that we've been granted bodies by Chen Yue's power...

"Press the button on the left side to enter the of whoever you want to contact. Your fuwen is carved to the backside of the charm. If someone asks for it, just tell them that. After entering the fuwen, press again to confirm the call. Wait for the other party to pick up. When you receive a call, this here will light up. Press the button on the left to receive. Hold it for five seconds to reject. When the light shows, place your hand on the charm and you'll be able to see the caller information. If you haven't learned how to use yet, just press the button and you'll be able to pick up the call normally."

From Ling Shi's instructions, the charm didn't sound difficult to use. There shouldn't be any problems.

Looks like every universe needed something as convenient as cellphones, Fan Tong thought.

"Do we need to pay to use this?"

Zhu Sha got straight to the main point. Ling Shi shook his head.

"This is an equipment to make communication convenient among citizens, so there's no fee to using it. Anyone with a blue tassel or higher receives one, unless you go buy one yourself which is okay too."

Oh ho, a societal convenience measure hm... They say it as though The Eastern City really cares for its people. Why not change the salvage boats by the Pool into steam ships instead? I think that's more practical.

"The button on the right is for when more than one person is using the charm. Pressing it once initiates the program and holding it for five seconds shuts it. When you start it, it automatically enters the first network connection point. If you set more than one networks, each press brings you to the next one. After entering the network, just keep the charm on you and you'll be able to hear anyone using the same connection. Likewise, the people on the other end will hear anything you say."

So there's a chat room function too? How high-tech. There are so many functions on such a small thing. Fuzhou's truly a miraculous subject.

"Configuring the settings require more advanced knowledge. I won't be teaching you this. I've already set a connection network inside and you're all in it. Try and activate it."

Since Ling Shi had told them, everybody opened up their group chat function. Considering that there was only one group right now, they all entered the same one. They activated the feature, but it's weird to talk when everyone's standing right next to each other. This suddenly created an awkward situation.

"I've finished passing out the charms. There are only six people, what's the seventh for?"

It turned out to be Ling Shi who started talking. They didn't think he would put himself in the network as well. The sounds overlapped as Ling Shi spoke next to them, but the one coming from the communication charm can only be heard inside their heads.

Judging from what he was saying, it seemed the one he was talking to was...

"Ah! Ling Shi! I transported myself to the wrong place earlier. I finally got back, but they already told Ying I didn't go. How unlucky."

...The voice of Yin Shi who had left a little earlier rang into their heads.

© Fan Tong's Afterword

Why do I feel so tired after killing just one chicken? I wasn't even the one who killed it.

The only thing worth celebrating is attaining the communication charm. According to my expert vision, I dare say this is high quality goods. I think I'll evaluate the price at the store next time. Maybe it'll make me so happy that I can't eat for three days.

Although it is admittedly very normal to be unable to eat for three days considering how horrible the rations taste and all, this is only a figure of speech.

I think that under the combined force of Lord Yin Shi and Bi Rou's pink atmosphere, everyone else becomes dull and grayscale. That's because they are

really too thorny, too bright, and too conspicuous, rendering us unable to look at them. It really feels painful.

Yue Tui, we have to quickly distance ourselves from them. I feel that staying near them is very unhealthy. Oh, of course that'd come after killing the chickens and taking the skin and feathers.

Okay, Alright, Zhu Sha can come with us. Since we are all roommates, we should stay united and either fight or retreat as a whole. I'm a principled person.

And those two cute girls will obviously fight or retreat with their roommates, considering that they are always happily looking at Mr. Handsome, isn't that right?

About the part where I will sell out my dignity and pride for three thousand strings When did I say that? Have I said that? Is following Lord Yin Shi related to selling out my dignity? ...Well, maybe it is a bit related... It is just that I think if my dignity and pride can be sold for three thousand strings, that's already a very high price. If possible, I wouldn't mind selling it at all. Unfortunately, the money never reached my hands, so clearly I don't have to follow Lord Yin Shi, tsk tsk.

Next: [Chapter 2: Flashing Lights are Prohibited](#)

Previous: [Fan Tong's Foreword](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

*The plate is apparently made out of stone but wooden-colored. Yes, it's a bit odd.

Translators: Namaejanai, Nuddle

Proofreaders: Charlotte, Kaitlin, namaejanai, pumpkin_so77, sae

means "little". Equivalent of Japanese honorific -chan

馬桶 (ma tong) means toilet

符文 (Fu Wen) a writing of Fuzhou.Acts like a telephone number here.

符力 (fu li), the powers associated with charms (Fuzhou)

← [Character Profiles \(Fan Tong Version\)](#) [Fan Tong's Foreword](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

9 Comments so far:

-  *kensche* says:

[January 22, 2015 at 12:35 pm](#)

Thank ya very much for the translation translator! Many thanks towards the Author!!

[Reply](#)



2. *Igatau* says:

[January 8, 2015 at 12:31 pm](#)

“Four hundred an hour meant 66 or 67 per minute” → Shouldn’t it be 6.6 or 6.7 per minute?

[Reply](#)

○ *Nannyn* says:

[January 10, 2015 at 4:44 am](#)

Oh yup, we’ll get that fixed straightaway.

[Reply](#)



3. *黒* says:

[May 3, 2014 at 8:19 pm](#)

*“Ah, I want to too, but *Yin would get mad.”*

*Ying

You’re doomed Lord Ling Shi, you won’t have a burial for your funeral.

>>Shouldn’t it be Yin Shi?

Yin Shi declared as he showed off the wooden accessory as if it was his precious treasure.

>>Is it wooden or stone?

*I finally got back, but they already told *Yin I didn’t go.*

*Ying

[Reply](#)

o *a giraffe* says:

[May 8, 2014 at 6:06 am](#)

Thanks for catching our mistakes! You've commented on quite a bit of them. :) Hopefully, you're enjoying our translations.

I've fixed everything except for the wooden accessory. We'll have to go check the raws again.

-PiKairi

[Reply](#)



■ 黒 says:

[May 10, 2014 at 7:44 pm](#)

Yeah, no problem! I wasn't sure if you guys would find all the little corrections annoying or not, but I thought I'd give it a shot. I'm definitely enjoying the translations. There seems to be a lot less Chinese light novels translated online as opposed to Japanese, so I'm really grateful! Makes me wish I could read Chinese too ^^.

Keep up the great work!

[Reply](#)



■ 黒 says:

[May 10, 2014 at 8:02 pm](#)

The funny thing about the "waist pad" is that the picture of it on the cover of volume 2 looks wooden. But maybe Yin Shi will get a wooden one later after breaking the stone one. ^^;;

[Reply](#)

-  *a giraffe* says:

[May 12, 2014 at 4:22 pm](#)

Actually, it should look wooden. XD Apparently it's a "wooden-colored" stone accessory. I have no clue why it's like that. Maybe the author was trying to cover all the bases?

[Reply](#)

4.  *jeanne95* says:

[October 21, 2013 at 3:14 am](#)

OMG thank you for traslating :D

[Reply](#)

Chapter 2: Flashing Lights are Prohibited

On April 11, 2013, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [1 Comment](#)

“The chickens were definitely .” – Fan Tong

“We’re the ones who’re flashed to death.” – Zhu Sha

Basically, no one cared where Yin Shi had supposedly teleported to, and even if they did, it wouldn’t have been of any use. He maintained his aptitude of completely neglecting other people’s problems. Although he excused himself by saying, “How unlucky”, it sounded more like he actually meant, “What’s past is past, so let’s just let nature take its course.”

Someone who’s always causing trouble for others shouldn’t have the right to say that he himself is out of luck.

“Hey, Yin, the extra communication charm...”

Ling Shi looked like he wanted to finish dealing with this problem, but his call was ignored by Yin Shi once again.

“Xiao Rou, are you there? I miss you.”

“Ah, me too, I also miss you.”

Bi Rou seemed like she couldn’t resist that sweet, gentle voice of his. The audience appeared to be pushed back by the pink aura that radiated in every direction from the couple as Bi Rou cupped her face shyly.

“Old man, make sure you protect Xiao Rou. If she’s missing even a single strand of hair, I’ll have some unfinished business with you.”

I heard humans lose a hundred strands of hair a day. You’re trying to force him to do something that’s beyond his power, Lord Yin Shi.

“Why don’t you do it yourself if you care so much? She’d prefer your company anyways.”

Ling Shi seemed to have guessed Bi Rou’s inner thoughts exactly. Her eyes suddenly lit up.

“Ah, then you go snatch people in the Chen Yue pathway in my place.”

“No.”

“Xiao Rou, this old man’s evil. Later, when he’s killing chickens, you should give him a stab in the back.”

“.....”

If he was serious, saying it now pretty much destroyed the point, so he’s probably joking then? But then why did he sound so serious?

“Yin Shi, Lord Ling Shi came to help us out of the goodness of his heart, so don’t be like this.”

Bi Rou still had some conscience, but Yin Shi, in that manner of his, was full of objections again.

“Xiao Rou, just call him Ling Shi. Don’t call him Lord Ling Shi anymore. I think you’re losing out like this – he’s taking advantage of you.”

I think it’s you who is losing out? Her addressing someone else using “Lord”, but not addressing you with “Lord”, means that you’re one rung short, no?

“Ah, is it like that? But it still feels strange... how about calling him Ling Shi dàgē?”

Bi Rou blinked innocently as she answered. Intense sounds of collisions could be heard from the communication charm, and no one was quite sure as to what had happened.

“I don’t mind.”

The corners of Ling Shi’s mouth curled slightly, smiling as though he’d found something amusing.

“Never! Actually, just call him ‘Lord’... Ah, why don’t you call him old man? That’d be the best.”

That’s not the best at all – it’s extremely rude.

“Xiao Rou, don’t mind him. Come with me, I’ll take you to go kill some chickens.”

Lord Ling Shi, when did you also start calling her Xiao Rou?

“Ah! Old man, what are you doing by addressing her so intimately?!! That nickname is exclusively for my use!”

So you mean none of us can call her that either...

“Why did you want me to bring seven Fuzhou communication charms?”

So you’re still nagging about that old problem even after wasting half the day away.

“...? Seven? Did I say that? Wasn’t it five?”

Everyone present could testify that you’d wanted seven.

“.....”

The smile that appeared on Ling Shi’s face contained a hint of murderous intent. It was probably due to the fury directed at Yin Shi’s brain, which no medicine could cure.

It’s not me who’s saying this, but Lord Ling Shi, when you get angry you’re still quite classy. No wonder Mi Zhong goes crazy all over you. It’s a pity this world doesn’t have cameras and recorders. If I sneakily took a few pictures of you and recorded some of your words, I could make quite a sum of money. It could even ignite rumors about the two attendants battling over a Western beauty, giving us enough picture and audio proof to create a sensation.

“Don’t mind that idiot. Let’s go kill some chickens...”

Your murderous intent was actually revealed through your word choice...

“Uh... Lord Ling Shi, do you know how to perform healing-type Fuzhou?”

Yue Tui still hadn’t given up on rescuing Fan Tong and his injury. After all, Yin Shi was no use saving anyone. Now that it’s the more reliable Ling Shi here, there seemed to be some hope.

“Healing?”

Ling Shi glanced at the people present. It was obvious that only Fan Tong was wounded.

“Was it caused by Yin Shi’s spell?”

You’re really good. That’s one discriminating eye you’ve got there.

“Yes...”

Yue Tui answered in Fang Tong’s place, following which Ling Shi lifted his hand and drew lines of Fuzhou in the air, just like back when the New Residents’ memories were sealed. The lines of Fuzhou he drew diffused in Fan Tong’s direction like a watermark, penetrating him then immediately vanished.

And that’s why they’re called experts. The higher level their tassel, the more extreme their methods. Luo Shi doesn’t use a brush, and Ling Shi doesn’t even need to use charm paper. This kind of competence really makes people jealous, though Fan Tong knew that even after spending several hundred years, one still might not be able to match that skill level.

“The wound isn’t healed?”

Zhu Sha looked at Fan Tong, who didn’t look the slightest bit different, and asked.

“This is a pain-relieving charm.”

Ling Shi explained. In other words, he didn’t even need to speak the name of the charm to unleash Fuzhou’s power.

Just a... pain-relieving charm...

Everyone didn’t know what to say.

Lord Ling Shi, so you’re the kind of person who treats the symptoms and not the root cause? Or is it that, in the field of Fuzhou, there is no such thing as a healing charm...?

Ling Shi had said that they would go kill chickens, but he didn’t give them any time to respond and just used Fuzhou to collectively transport them to a different place. Looking at the unfamiliar surroundings, everyone felt bewildered.

“There aren’t enough chickens in Resource Area 1 and they’re a little spread out. Going to Resource Area 2 is more efficient.”

Seeing the doubt in their eyes, Ling Shi explained himself – of course someone had to ask a question at this time.

“Then why doesn’t everyone come to Resource Area 2 instead of killing in Resource Area 1?”

“Because in Resource Area 2, aside from chickens, there are also some creatures that students with light green tassels are unable to handle. Normally, only students with blue tassels frequent this area. If students with light green or white tassels came, I’m afraid that before they got their hands on the loot, they’d already incurred debt from dying.”

Hahahahahaha. This joke isn’t funny at all...

Immediately after, Ling Shi took out his blue-black jade accessory. Like Yin Shi, when he threw the jade accessory up, it floated up to create a huge, distinct emblem expanding in the air.

“Charm of Ling Shi, Restriction Order, boundary: Resource Area 2. Aside from the six people closest to me, everyone else must leave this area within 10 minutes. This restriction will automatically lift after I leave.”

Apparently, preparations ahead of time were very important. Like Yin Shi, Ling Shi also “booked the entire block.” They’d asked Yin Shi earlier but didn’t receive an answer. So now they tried Ling Shi.

“Lord Ling Shi, what is that?”

“The jade accessory all five of Eastern City’s attendants have. It’s the primary symbol of our status and is used to set Restriction Orders. Like you just saw, it can be used to set boundaries and restrictive conditions. Those who violate the rules will receive punishment. That’s pretty much it.”

To put it simply, it’s a token of the privileged class... no, this token also has practical uses, so it’s not just a token. It should be called... a lethal weapon of the privileged class?

Because Fan Tong had nearly died due to the same kind of object, a lethal weapon was the first thing he thought of.

However, it’s obviously an important item, but Yin Shi still called it a toy. Could it be that he often takes it out to play? “Charm of Yin Shi, Restriction Order, boundary: the west side of Eastern City. Everyone must make weird grimacing faces. This restriction will automatically lift in one hour,” something like that?

Just thinking about it already makes me uncomfortable.

“Before we start killing chickens, are there any more questions?”

Ling Shi seemed to have a more thoughtful personality, even giving them the opportunity to ask some questions first.

“What do we have to do?”

Zhu Sha raised his hand and asked.

“Skin the chickens, pluck the feathers, follow closely, speak up if left behind, and yell for help if attacked.”

Ling Shi’s reply was extremely concise. Bi Rou also raised her hand, but when Ling Shi looked in her direction, she first turned off the group communication function.

“That is... does Yin Shi currently have someone he loves?”

Wasn’t it you? Actually, wait a sec, when someone says you can ask questions, he doesn’t mean that any question is okay, right? We’ve already diverged from the main subject; I’m begging you to stay on the topic of killing chickens...

“About two hundred of them.”

Ling Shi’s thoughtless reply immediately caused Bi Rou’s face to turn deathly pale, and tears quickly collected at the corners of her eyes. Seeing this kind of response, Ling Shi immediately corrected himself.

“Just kidding. He has none.”

Two hundred versus none at all – the gap in the middle seems just a little too big.

“No lover? That’s only natural right?”

Fan Tong was still thinking that he didn’t know what the opposite of “That’s impossible” would be. He didn’t expect the reverse to come out like that.

Oh, so it was “that’s only natural”? Who cares if it’s reasonable or not – it seems like it caused me to say something bad about Lord Yin Shi...

“When normal girls try to get close to him and find out about his strange personality, their dreams dissipate on their own.”

He didn't expect Ling Shi to actually confirm his words, and he didn't know when Ling Shi had sneakily turned off group communication. That said, Bi Rou really wasn't a normal girl...

"Even though Lord Yin Shi's character is a little weird, his other qualifications should be enough for people to ignore this, right?"

That Zhu Sha would say this kind of thing made Fan Tong very surprised. He thought it was only natural for that kind of serious person to despise Yin Shi's careless personality.

Personality is actually very important, something that absolutely can't be ignored. But good looks, strength, high status and money are appealing indeed... even though we haven't really seen very much of his strength.

"Oh."

Ling Shi listened to Zhu Sha's misgivings and indifferently started explaining.

"There are lots of reasons, but basically, he's someone who really doesn't understand expressions of love."

And then he began to confidently list examples.

The girls of Eastern City were mostly very shy. When expressing their feelings through words and actions, they were afraid to be too obvious, and Yin Shi paid no attention at all to the girls' delicate feelings. Waiting for him to find out for himself wouldn't work for sure. If they had wanted their unrequited love to become mutual affection, they could only do a reverse chase, but Yin Shi's inability to understand expressions of love made this very hard to accomplish.

"Lord Yin Shi, these are cookies I baked myself. I hope you can accept my feelings..."

When the girls held back their insecurity with great difficulty and flagged down Yin Shi, planning to give him the presents they made themselves, Yin Shi's response was often not what they expected.

"Ah, but I don't like eating snacks. Ling Shi, do you want to eat them?"

He didn't know how to window-dress his feelings and even tried to transfer their feelings over to someone else, right in the girl's face.

Usually, this already defeated lots of girls who weren't as shameless. Of those who could put up with having their gifts rejected, there was a portion who wanted to get straight to the point and announce their love, so it became like this:

"Lord Yin Shi, I like you!"

The girl lowered her head with a flushed face, gathering up her courage and speaking the lines that she'd practiced for so long.

"Thank you! I also like you very much!"

Yin Shi revealed an exceedingly brilliant smile lacking even a sliver of feeling. After replying callously, he immediately dumped the girl and left.

Directly confessing, of course, had also been verified as unsuccessful.

.....

Lord Yin Shi, you're so ruthless, that kind of reply is really not too far from "You're a good person." How can you expect girls to live through that?

.....

In his heart, Fang Tong deeply sympathized with those girls whose glass hearts had been shattered to pieces. If any girls confessed to him, he would never be so unemotional and inconsiderate like that. Even if there really wasn't a reason for them to get together, at least he would reply with "I'm really happy" and then say a few reasons that the other could accept...

But considering the condition of his mouth, saying "I'm really happy" would most likely become "I'm in a bad mood," and if this hurts people's feelings, it wasn't something he's willing to do.

"Hm? Eastern City girls just give up like this? Aren't their perseverance levels too low?"

This time, the one with objections was Bi Rou. It seemed like she was advocating on Yin Shi's behalf, thinking that, with such good qualifications, everyone shouldn't be giving up like this.

"Actually, there are other reasons..."

Ling Shi said this and confidently brought up proof and examples once again.

Despite the rejections of the gifts and the failures of the confessions, there were some girls who still endured these blows and pulled themselves together once more. They felt that maybe an opportunity will arise if they tried harder, and so decided to continue pushing themselves. To make Yin Shi notice their existences, they would patiently wait for Yin Shi, even if the chance of him appearing was very low.

After all, if one flagged down Yin Shi to talk to him, he would still pay attention. Even though his words might not be pleasant, one only had to match his method of speaking and they should be able to have a proper conversation right?

There were more than just a few girls who thought like this and then tried to carry it out, but Yin Shi's method of thinking was really too exhausting, both physically and mentally. Also, girls occasionally ran into this kind of occurrence while talking with Yin Shi...

"Ah, when you say this, I think of..."

"Yin."

Ling Shi appears from the side, looks at Yin Shi, and wrinkles his brows.

"Your clothes are rumpled, didn't you notice that? Since you're outside, you should pay more attention to your appearance right?"

Ling Shi would say. Due to his many years in taking care of the queen's attire, he'd already developed certain habits. He would then promptly reach over and smoothly help Yin Shi tidy up the rumpled hems of his clothing. Ling Shi then loosens the collar and fixes it, moving on to adjusting the sleeves and buttons. His natural and harmonious movement as well as the proximity of the two, made the scene as beautiful as a painting...



"Oh –"

The girl would then act like she'd received a life-threatening blow and run out crying without looking back.

“Ah, Ling Shi, why did she run away?”

“... It’s not something you’d want to know.”

“So that’s about it for the reasons why Yin Shi hasn’t had a lover until now.”

Ling Shi finished it up simply, completely ignoring the few people aiming complicated gazes at him.

The biggest reason is actually you, right? The biggest reason is actually you, right — ! There are no waves without wind. No wonder everyone’s always misunderstanding that you two are together even if they know you’re a guy!

After Bi Rou finished listening, she brought her hand near her mouth and hesitated for a few seconds, then suddenly revealed a very happy expression.

“Ling Shi Gege, I really can’t thank you enough —”

So you decided to call him Gege? And what are you thanking him for again?

“Because of you, Yin Shi was able to stay single, so that’s why I had a chance. When I think about it this way, it makes me so happy —”

Miss Bi Rou, even though it looks like you’ve grasped the point, I still think that what you said seems pretty strange. It’s not something normal people would say...

“Sigh, is Yin Shi really that great?”

Ling Shi’s sigh sounds a little bit helpless – no, it should be extremely helpless.

I won’t comment on whether Yin Shi is great or not, but I think that three thousand strings is pretty nice.

“Ling Shi Gege, do you think there’s hope for me? Does he like my type?”

Bi Rou widened her large and beautiful eyes as she asked worriedly. It looked like her self-confidence wasn’t quite enough.

Why did it become a romance consultation again? What about our chickens?

“I don’t know, but I can help you by preventing other girls from getting close to him.”

I don’t know either about whether he likes this type of girl, but I can tell that

you really do...

“Ling Shi Gege, you’re so kind!”

Bi Rou was so happy that it looked like she would fly up into the sky. However, she still remembered the differences between males and females, so she couldn’t just throw herself onto someone who wasn’t her lover.

“Shh, don’t let him know.”

Lord Ling Shi, is it really okay to forget your friends like this after finding a new love?

Compared to Yin Shi, Ling Shi was much more realistic. He had nothing to do with inefficient methods like using a fruit knife to kill chickens. Before they started, he stated, “We’ll kill until 7, then count how many we have” and then got to work. Basically, what he did was use his slender white fingers to draw Fuzhou one after the other, killing off every organism in his sight. This included lots of things that weren’t chickens as well.

Places like Resource Area 1 and Resource Area 2 begin with “Resource Area” precisely because the organisms that grow in these places all have a certain economic value. However, different body parts held different values. Because it’s impossible to carry back the entire creature, you would have to recognize which parts are valuable in order to make collection efficient. Ling Shi had made a huge mess when killing the organisms. And naturally, because they just came to this world, they weren’t equipped with this fundamental moneymaking knowledge. Looking at that pile of corpses of non-chickens, Fan Tong felt like he’d almost get a heart attack.

Every dead body equals money! At this point Fan Tong had already gotten rid of the uneasiness that came with massacring animals. He wasn’t the one who’d killed them anyways. Facing such an enormous debt, he didn’t even see them as corpses, but as materials that could be sold for money. Too bad he didn’t know how to utilize them.

“You all can just pluck the chicken feathers and peel the skins. Those other animals were killed for safety considerations.”

Ling Shi said. Looks like he had no interest in telling them which body parts were valuable. Then again, his mission was just to help them kill chickens, so he didn't feel obligated to go beyond that.

Because the corpses piled up very quickly, everyone focused themselves into an assembly line. Their job was to find the chicken corpses from the pile, peel the skins, pluck the feathers, then rummage speedily for the next chicken corpse. The entire situation could be described as being very busy.

And then, because Yin Shi made a fuss about Bi Rou being missing, those who turned off group communication were forced to turn it back on. As they continued working, they were also mentally attacked.

"Xiao Rou, Xiao Rou, look, tonight's moon is so round."

It's sunset now, mister. And today was cloudy. So much for your moon.

"Yes, it's so round."

I think it's obvious he's just toying with you, so why are you playing along so seriously?

"Xiao Rou, I miss you so much."

"I miss you too."

"You're treating everyone else like air, aren't you..."

Ling Shi couldn't resist speaking up. In the midst of all the sappy talk, his hand had twitched and accidentally affected the Fuzhou's aim, bringing disaster to the innocent trees at the side.

Your interruption was timed too perfectly, Lord Ling Shi.

"Ah, I can't see anyone else, I can only see the figure of Xiao Rou in my heart."

"Ah, Yin Shi —"

Why don't you two try being even more extreme, huh? Lord Yin Shi, you can't even hear anyone other than Bi Rou, can you.

"Xiao Rou, when I look at the moon I think of you. The moon isn't as pretty as you."

What is the logical relationship between those two sentences? Looking at the

moon and thinking of Yue Tui seems about right – at least there is the character for “moon” in his name...

“Really? I feel so embarrassed –”

Someone come and drag this girl away, I’m begging you. Wait no, Fuzhou communication charms work long distance, so dragging her away won’t help...

Intoxicated by Yin Shi’s honeyed words, Bi Rou naturally couldn’t peel skins or pluck feathers efficiently. No one really bothered her about it. There wasn’t even enough time for them to take care of their own chickens, so they weren’t interested in her working speed.

Ling Shi was the type who always did his job properly. Knowing that they’d be in danger if they were attacked here, he mostly stayed in places where he could still see them. When he’d killed everything nearby, he’d used long-range attacks to kill other creatures still within his angle of vision. To protect the others more easily, he never strayed too far.

While engaging in physical labor, Fan Tong saw his own incompetence.

Setting aside those two cute girls and Bi Rou, Zhu Sha was 1.5 times faster than him in peeling and plucking, and Yue Tui was twice as fast. Fan Tong was undoubtedly bigger in frame than the others but still lost by a large margin. He truly wasn’t slacking off, so this kind of outcome was really hard to accept.

Could he use his injury as an excuse? Although he couldn’t feel any pain at the moment. Or maybe he can comfort himself by saying everyone has things they’re not good at?

“Fan Tong, don’t slack off.”

Of course Zhu Sha would say something like that. *Ahhhhhhhhhhh damn you, don’t think that it is only normal for other people to be able to handle everything you can –*

So, Fan Tong decided that he might as well slow down his already slow movements. That way, he could observe how other people are peeling and plucking the chickens so quickly and neatly.

Zhu Sha peeled skins and plucked feathers in one action. His physical strength

seemed to be relatively good, so after he finished taking care of one, he could immediately go forth and look for the next. There wasn't much of a break in between – no wonder he was faster than Fan Tong.

Fan Tong couldn't see Yue Tui peeling skins or plucking feathers at all.

That's right, the simple movements of lifting the hand and lowering the knife were done so quickly Fan Tong couldn't see them.

... Yue Tui, who exactly are you? Why, why can't I see? That's not right, I did see the afterimage, but, but... also, why is it that after you finish with one chicken, you can accurately walk over to the next one with just a quick glance, as if you're not even searching for it? How can you sense where the chicken corpses are? Is the composition of your eyes different from ours?

Yue Tui seemed like he was concentrating on his own work. He didn't notice Fan Tong's horrified gaze at all – only Zhu Sha did.

"Fan Tong, hurry up and do your work."

I know, I know. Why do you have to keep staring at me...

"Ah!"

At this time, Bi Rou suddenly cried out. The others could only see her dazedly looking at her hand, which had received a small injury. A tiny creature then fled in the opposite direction, but Ling Shi's Fuzhou struck it down. He also hurriedly asked her a question.

"Are you alright?"

"I'm fine..."

"Xiao Rou? What happened?"

Yin Shi had also heard her cry out, so he too used his Fuzhou communication charm to ask.

"Nothing, just now something small suddenly appeared and bit me, but it's already dead."

"Ahhhh! Ling Shi, I'm going to flay your skin! Didn't I say that she can't be missing even a single hair!"

What was I saying about forcing someone to do something beyond his power...

“Use your hands, use your body, it’d even be okay to use your hair to shield her! How could you let Xiao Rou get hurt! Any attack is okay as long as it only harms you. You must apologize for this with seppuku!

“.....”

Isn’t this already a completely unreasonable request? Even Lord Ling Shi got quiet.

“Ah, I’m almost at the Chen Yue pathway. I’ll settle things with you later...”

According to Yin Shi’s personality, he’d most likely forget by the time “later” comes. However, Bi Rou still awkwardly expressed her apologies toward Ling Shi. Getting bitten was a small matter and Yin Shi’s response was a little extreme, so she worried that Ling Shi would be unhappy.

“No problem, even if I was unhappy, it’d be directed at that idiot.”

Ling Shi smiled viciously, the kind of grin made people want to back away a little.

“Actually, following what he says can’t be too hard, so let’s do that.”

What? Lord Ling Shi, you also feel that any attack is okay as long as it only harms you? Shouldn’t you care more about your own body?

And also, Lord Yin Shi, you’re pretty strange, actually telling another man to use his body to shield your own girl. You’re not afraid that someone else sacrificing himself like this would bring about special feelings and cause her to cease to be faithful?

“It’s only the difference between using a man’s appearance and a woman’s. It’s all the same right, so is there a need to protect her so fiercely?”

Zhu Sha unhappily stated this. He seemed quite resentful towards indulging girls or coddling them, that kind of thing.

So you actually advocate gender equality? Getting a girlfriend in the future most likely won’t be easy for you. Protecting girls also give you a sense of achievement. Could it be that you don’t think this way?

“Regarding other people’s affairs, I think you just shouldn’t mind them too much. That’s their own personal business.”

Yue Tui said. But while he was speaking, a trace of coldness passed over his sky-blue eyes almost unnoticeably.

Coldness? Did I see it wrong? It’s Yue Tui though...?

Fan Tong rubbed his eyes, but Yue Tui had continued peeling skin using his miraculous techniques again, and Fan Tong could not look again more carefully.

Ling Shi stopped working punctually. Once 7 o’clock arrived, he stopped killing chickens, and the other organisms of Resource Area 2 had therefore escaped from their death.

Checking the number of skins and feathers collected by each person, Fan Tong found that there were 723 portions in total. Everyone had enough skins, but they still needed to get more feathers. It was more awkward for Fan Tong and the other white tassels because they didn’t have enough feathers, just skins, and so they couldn’t directly ascend to grass green tassels. They still had to collect enough feathers before they could proceed to rise in rank.

“Let’s finish killing the rest next time. Yin, do it when you have free time.”

Ling Shi said this to Yin Shi through the group chat. *Truthfully, buying several pillows will take care of everything. Lord, you’re really not going to consider that?*

And then Ling Shi did something cruel – aside from the 100 skins each person needed, he took away the rest.

“Letting you all take the extra to sell is unreasonable. Just consider this my reward.”

But you obviously aren’t lacking money at all – !

Fantong’s heart ached terribly seeing the chicken skins being taken away. If he had known earlier, he wouldn’t have been so honest when reporting the amount. That way, maybe he could have been able to sneakily keep a few.

Ling Shi used Fuzhou to send them back to their dormitories, though he didn’t

go with them himself. The dormitory was shining with light. Everyone was so tired that they just wanted to go in and rest, but Zhu Sha still insisted on grabbing dinner. After entrusting Zhu Sha to collect their dinners for them, Fan Tong and Yue Tui promptly walked together to room #444.

Of course, they didn't forget to shut off group communication first to avoid being bombarded with Yin Shi and Bi Rou's sugary flirting.

It's true that it had been an exhausting day. Thinking about eating those mediocre public rations really made Fan Tong sad, but after so much work, if he didn't even eat dinner, he would have a hard time staying functional. In order to stay alive, he had no choice but to give in.

"Fan Tong, your injury..."

While walking with him back to their room, Yue Tui looked at him anxiously.

Right, how long will Lord Ling Shi's pain-relieving charm will last?

"It hurts a lot now. It's really bad."

Hey, hey. I wanted to say, "It doesn't hurt now. It's fine," all right? Twisting my words like this makes it seem like I'm deliberately trying to gain people's sympathy. I don't like this kind of feeling.

"It hurts a lot? Ah, wounds from being struck by lightning aren't minor injuries. It's only right for it to hurt a lot..."

After listening to him say this, Fan Tong saw the worry in Yue Tui's eyes thickened. Fan Tong really wanted to explain that it wasn't like that, but the words he said were still along the lines of "That's right," "It really hurts," "I say, I'm almost dying from the pain," that kind of thing. It was not helpful at all.

Fan Tong looked at Yue Tui, his expression appearing very sympathetic. He also looked a bit conscience-stricken. His furrowed brows made him seem to be hesitating over something. Yue Tui then turned around, his lips softly reciting something Fan Tong couldn't understand. When he turned back, a ball of white light had appeared between his two hands that gave out a feeling of profound warmth.

The ball of white light quickly enveloped Fan Tong, almost melting into his body. Fan Tong didn't realized what had happened before it was all over. He then saw Yue Tui smiling at him. That smile also made him feel very warm.

"Is it a bit better now?"

Because it originally didn't feel painful, Fan Tong really had a hard time answering this question. But he discovered, with amazement, that all of the injuries on his body were gone. When he wiped off the blood, the skin underneath was also as good as new. The only word to describe it was unimaginable.

What do you mean, a bit better? It's obviously completely healed!

"Wah! Yue Tui! You know how to heal? What kind of Shufa is this? Did you not learn this from class? How come you didn't use it earlier?"

It came out so weird again. Whatever.

"This is because... because..."

Yue Tui immediately began stuttering, seeming a little flustered. He tried making an excuse for it, but couldn't squeeze out a good reason.

"Fan Tong, I'm sorry for letting you bear such an uncomfortable injury for so long... There's a good reason for this. And also, this isn't Shufa... don't tell anyone, okay?"

Nn? Not Shufa? Then what is it? An ability from when he was still living? Yue Tui, what kind of world did you come from? Or is this a new ability you gained after coming here?

"No, then what do I say if other people ask me why my injury hasn't healed yet?"

Stupid curse! Don't mess up my words of agreement so it seems like I'm deliberately making things difficult for other people, okay?

"Oh..."

Yue Tui looked perplexed. Fan Tong felt that if he was Yue Tui, he would feel

very troubled too.

“Just say, you woke up and it had healed on its own...?”

If I say that, the others will treat me like an immortal cockroach and trample on me as much as they please. Fan Tong couldn't resist shaking his head.

“What should we do? Why don't we think of a reason together?”

Two people thinking together really won't increase the chance of coming up with a good reason at all. For brainstorming ideas, two people didn't seem quite quite enough.

“I'm back – ”

Before they could muster up an excuse, Zhu Sha had already returned with their dinner. Sure enough, he quickly noticed how Fan Tong's injuries had completely disappeared. And naturally, he spoke up about this inexplicable phenomenon.

“How come your injuries are completely healed?”

“...Maybe Lord Ling Shi's Fuzhou did have healing effects.”

Fan Tong forcibly made up a reason. As the curse didn't act up, Zhu Sha seemed to have accepted it. It's just that this can't be used with Ling Shi. Fan Tong hoped that Ling Shi wouldn't have the same question the next time they met.

Yue Tui seemed to breathe a bit easier, then smiled at Fan Tong again. Fan Tong, too, returned the smile.

The warm feeling now seemed like it could make him forget about everything unpleasant.

He once again realized how great it was to have friends.

© Fan Tong's Afterword

The fact that I was able to make a friend like Yue Tui must be due to the good fortune I earned in my past life.

It must be the good karma I accumulated from operating as a fortune teller. God has definitely seen my hard work and rewarded me for it. I am so moved. I'd

originally thought that my skin continue looking like burnt rice until the next time I died, but thankfully I got out of this sticky situation. I sincerely cannot thank God and Yue Tui enough.

I only have to collect some chicken feathers to upgrade to a grass green tassel in one go. Then, every month I can use the fixed salary to pay off my debt, and my life in the Eastern City will have mostly stabilized, right?

It seems many unexpected things happened today. I've also met some people I never thought I would meet. Fate really is such a mysterious thing, just as mysterious as Lord Yin Shi and Miss Bi Rou getting along while ignoring everyone else...

Ah! It's over! Mi Zhong knows my ins and outs. He will definitely challenge me and become a grass green tassel by stepping over my corpse! Now isn't the time to think about that pair of flashy lovers!

If someone challenges, can I find others to help me? I need to find an opportunity to find out more about this, or maybe I can ask Zhu Sha. If I can ask for help, then I'll definitely glue myself to Yue Tui from now on. He'll probably help me if he sees someone attacking me, right?

Completely relying on a friend seems kind of cowardly... maybe next time I should do some fortunetelling for Yue Tui as compensation. This seems like the only thing I can do. But I can only discern things from the past through . Will this help him?

I still have to go to school tomorrow — it's that damn class from Wushu Xuan again. I should sleep properly to stay energized, so let's not think any further.

Next: [Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, Oh, Chicken Skins Too](#)

Previous: [Chapter 1: Boss, We'll Be Taking All the Chicken](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translators: Sherry
Proofreaders: Kaitlin, KooriNoKitsune, PiKairi, Snowstorm

This is in regards to Yin Shi and Bi Rou’s overly-bright lovey dovey aura.
According to wiki, it’s a form of Japanese ritual suicide.
<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seppuku>

Similar to palm-reading. You try to find out someone’s fortune by reading their face

← [Author’s Note Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, and our Chicken Skins too](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.

☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

One Comment so far:



1. *kensche* says:

[January 22, 2015 at 1:54 pm](#)

Thank ya very much for the translation translator! Many thanks towards the Author!!

[Reply](#)

Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, Oh, Chicken Skins Too

On August 29, 2013, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [2 Comments](#)

“Is this a situation where people die for feathers and birds die to become food? But I think people would actually be happier with dying to become food...”
– Fan Tong

After going through an extraordinary day, suddenly having to return to an ordinary school day was really hard for one to adjust to.

However, people wouldn't rise to the privileged class just because their friends had befriended dignitaries, at least most people wouldn't. First let's not mention the fact that this friend's relationship was still very ordinary. Although this friend's friend was an important person, the connection was still a bit distant. If one wanted to increase his or her own competitiveness edge, obediently going to school and building up a good foundation was still a more dependable method.

But early this morning, Yue Tui's coloring didn't look so good. His skin looked kind of pale, and he seemed weak. No one had any idea what was wrong.

“New Residents can get sick?”

Zhu Sha was surprised at Yue Tui's condition but at the same time still considerately poured him a cup of warm water.

“Thank you...”

Yue Tui leaned against the bed, accepted the cup of warm water, and took a sip.

“Are you still going to school today?”

“I think... I'll rest a bit first, it should be somewhat better later. I can probably still go to the afternoon class...”

The afternoon class is the Wushu combat class, so there's no need to go if you're not feeling well, right?

"Eating some breakfast will make it a bit better, won't it? I can help you get a portion."

"... No, thank you...You don't have to, it's okay."

Eating that kind of yucky, unwholesome food will just worsen his cold. Didn't you notice that Yue Tui became paler?

He's already not feeling well, so don't torment him any more.

"Then I'm going to class now."

Zhu Sha gathered up his things and promptly left the room. Fan Tong felt that Zhu Sha was the sort of person who would still eat three meals and go to school even if the sky fell.

"Fan Tong... you're not going to class?"

Yue Tui looked at him and asked.

"I'm staying to take care of you. When you feel better, we'll leave class together."

Leave class together... nn, whatever, it's still within the limit of an acceptable mistake.

"You don't have to take care of me. It's okay."

But I don't want to go to class. One entire morning of Wushu lecture! Won't I die of boredom? Just let me take care of you!

"Anyways, while I'm staying here if you need anything, don't tell me."

There it is again, it turned into something disastrous, wah...

As Fan Tong sank into the abyss of saying the wrong thing, a knock on the door rang out. Thinking that he might say "Don't come in" if he answered the door, Fan Tong opened the door in person.

The person outside the door was Bi Rou. This morning she was dressed up very prettily. When she saw Fan Tong, she began speaking quietly.

"I ran into Zhu Sha and heard that Yue Tui was sick. Is he all right?"

"He's resting."

"Then... here's some fruit that I bought. He'll have more of an appetite for these, right? I hope he gets well soon."

"You're welcome."

Fan Tong had kept saying "you're welcome" instead of "thank you," and this always caused difficulties for him. He also felt some resentment while looking at Bi Rou offering the fruit.

Three thousand strings —

"Ah, this is for Yue Tui, you can't eat it all yourself!"

Bi Rou explained distrustfully. Fan Tong felt a bit helpless.

Do I really seem that untrustworthy? Or do I have the look of someone who sneakily eats others' food? I admit that earlier I was secretly drooling over this fresh fruit, but this doesn't mean that I'll unscrupulously seize a sick friend's food, okay?

After Bi Rou left, Fan Tong walked back to the bed holding the fruit. Honestly speaking, because Yue Tui was lying in the middle bunk, taking care of him wasn't very convenient. However, telling him to temporarily move to the bottom bunk was kind of strange, so they could only do it this way.

"Yue Tui, here are some vegetables that Bi Rou brought, want to eat some?"

Wah, what kind of change was that!

"No thanks, I won't eat any."

Earlier, Yue Tui had turned his face away from Fan Tong, so Fan Tong couldn't see his expression. Fan Tong was surprised that Yue Tui had decided not to eat.

"Fruit tastes worse than public rations. We rarely have the opportunity to eat fruit. Are you really not going to eat a little?"

If fruit tasted worse than public rations, I wouldn't want to eat it either. What a terrible misunderstanding...

"That can't be right, is there anything that tastes worse than public rations?"

That teased a smile from Yue Tui. Saying the wrong thing really wasn't bad if it had this kind of effect.

"You won't know if you don't eat any."

Originally he'd wanted to say "You'll know if you eat some." Surprisingly, after being reversed, the meaning was still about the same. How astonishing.

"Okay, I'll eat a bit then."

Yue Tui seemed to be in a better mood. He sat up and took a delicious-looking piece of fruit from Fan Tong's hand.

"How is it, does it taste bad?"

"It tastes bad."

Yue Tui has actually started making jokes? But it would be embarrassing if Bi Rou found out.

Bi Rou had brought four pieces of fruit, but Yue Tui had only eaten one before he didn't want to eat anymore. Based on the thought that not eating them would be a waste, naturally it was up to Fan Tong to take care of the rest. He actually ate them quite happily.

"Fan Tong... in your original world, what kind of person were you?"

In the past they really hadn't talked much. Normally Fan Tong practiced writing with Yue Tui. Zhu Sha was in the room as well, so starting up a conversation was still quite awkward.

Right now they couldn't practice writing. Since they were rarely alone together and had nothing to do, it was naturally the perfect opportunity for chatting.

Chatting was a good way for people to understand each other better. Fan Tong was also very happy to talk about himself, but he really wasn't very good at making conversation.

With this mouth, it's just wishful thinking to want to have a proper conversation.

"My original profession was divination."

"Divination?"

Evidently Yue Tui had never heard of this term before, as indicated by the confused expression on his face.

“It’s like fortunetelling, but I also include lots of other things, like how to avert disaster and good matchmaking advice . There are also different levels of fortunetelling; mine isn’t very accurate.”

“Do you provide other services because your fortunetelling isn’t very accurate?”

Yue Tui opened his eyes wide in understanding. In contrast, Fan Tong felt helpless. Of course he wanted to say that his fortunetelling was very accurate, but his mouth had made difficulties for him, and he couldn’t do anything about it.

“Yue Tui, how about you?”

If he continued talking, he was afraid that he would twist his past self into someone completely different. Compared to talking, he was more suited to being a listener; of this point he was very aware.

“I...”

Yue Tui stared blankly, dumbfounded, when his question was returned. It looked like he’d originally only wanted to hear about Fan Tong and hadn’t planned on talking about himself.

“My past... there’s really nothing worth mentioning about it. To me, there isn’t a thing.”

Usually people would be at least a little distressed when saying something like that, but Yue Tui didn’t reveal that kind of feeling. While he was talking, his entire person was completely calm.

Actually, Fan Tong didn’t like this kind of “calm” that Yue Tui revealed on occasion. This kind of calm encompassed “empty” and “silent” feelings, making it hard for people to judge whether he was actually repressing all of his emotions or actually didn’t feel any emotion.

Even though it was hard to judge, Fan Tong believed that Yue Tui was forcibly repressing himself – letting himself seem to be in the emotionless state of

“emptiness.” After all, normally Yue Tui seemed to be very ordinary.

I don't know if it's just a protective measure, or even a habitual state of his subconscious...

Fan Tong just thought that Yue Tui in that kind of state seemed to be remote from people. That chasm was difficult to cross because it was intangible and nearly impossible to see.

“If you feel sad, it's okay to express it...”

When Fan Tong said that, Yue Tui's gaze seemed to freeze for a few seconds. At that moment Fan Tong even had a kind of feeling that he'd said something wrong, but his words definitely hadn't been reversed.

“... That's right, I'm always forgetting that here isn't that place anymore...”

What he called “that place” should be the world Yue Tui originally lived in. Fan Tong had a hard time imagining exactly what kind of life Yue Tui had lived there.

He's already living in a completely different world, so how could he still have misconceptions?

“Thinking it over carefully, there were still good things. I liked saving people, but this wasn't completely...”

He held back his train of thought then seemed to feel tired, so he promptly closed his eyes and fell asleep.

It was good for someone who wasn't feeling well to sleep. Fan Tong quietly stayed by his side, trying not to disturb his rest.

If it was possible, he really wanted to go back to sleep too, but he'd slept early last night. Right now his mind was very alert; if he forced himself to lie down, he probably wouldn't be able to fall asleep, so he had no choice but to stay awake.

It was noon when Yue Tui woke up. When he opened his eyes, it seemed like he couldn't tell if he was still in dreamland or in reality, which caused him to tense up. He only relaxed when he'd made sense of his surroundings and seen Fan Tong inside the room. The expression on his face brightened as well.

“Fan Tong... what time is it?”

“It’s nighttime.”

Because he’d reported the time wrong, he’d caused Yue Tui to be anxious for a bit. Yue Tui sat up and noticed the bright sunlight before he patted his chest in relief.

“Whew. And Zhu Sha isn’t in the room either. It’s not nighttime, Fan Tong, what’d you scare me for.”

When will you realize that I have a speech problem...

“I think it should be fine for me to get out of bed and walk around. Let’s go to class.”

Yue Tui said this, then promptly changed his clothes and made preparations.

“But we don’t have weapons, so won’t we be driven out by the Bicycle Teacher?”

Wah! That’s amazing! The Tractor Teacher got turned into the Bicycle Teacher! I never thought that this kind of new term would appear, how original!

..... I’m getting better and better at masking my embarrassment.

“Bicycle Teacher?”

Yue Tui’s face was full of confusion.

Even if I said “Tractor Teacher” without any mistakes, I think he still wouldn’t understand.

“Maybe we can talk things over with the teacher. It’s possible to carry out Wushu combat unarmed.”

You want me to go up against people with weapons unarmed? No way! You can, but I definitely can’t. I’ve never learned how to disarm a person with a blade unarmed, so spare me! Also, how do you think you’ll communicate with that Tractor Teacher? With your fists?

“I’ve finished preparing, let’s go.”

“Right.”

.....

This violation of free will, the erroneous reply that resulted in my life travelling a divergent path, how many more times does this have to happen?

“Yue Tui, the chicken skins and feathers.....”

“Right, carrying it is safer.”

According to what they’d learned from asking around, there were people who stole chicken skins and feathers, so leaving them in the room when no one’s inside really made them uneasy. It’s just that carrying a bag of chicken skins and feathers on one’s person isn’t really convenient, so it’s truly very bothersome.

When Bi Rou came this morning, it seemed that she’d already replaced her tassel with a grass green one. Zhu Sha had also said that he would take the chicken skins to rise in rank before school. This truly made them envious...

“Even though it’s a little inconvenient, we should still carry them. I’m fine with holding them.”

And so, they carried their “precious goods” like this and went out.

After Fan Tong and Yue Tui walked outside, they ran into an unfriendly crowd.

They’d thought that there were people who would steal, but they’d forgotten that there were also people who would seize it by force.

“Hand over the chicken skins and feathers, or else prepare to be reborn in the Pond!”

The robbers in the middle of the street, aren’t they too extreme.

“.....”

Yue Tui was slightly transfixed, mostly because, in all the education he’d received, he’d never been taught how to deal with this kind of event. However, Fan Tong was also frozen in place. In any case, he was unable to manage the situation too.

Forget about the street robbery. What was more over-the-top was, those who came to rob them were a group of blue tassels. That is to say, what they wanted was to prevent the two of them from rising in rank as well as wanting to sell off

the skins and feathers to make money.

Looking at them so determined to win, giving orders so ferociously, they really couldn't react for a period of time.

We really can't just hand over our items like this, right? But if we don't, what should we do?

Onlookers mostly chose to ignore the robbery. Aside from not wanting to get drawn into the quarrel and make enemies with so many people, a number of them also noticed that those getting robbed were Westerners, so they had no intention to intervene.

The racial discrimination here is quite serious. I wonder if Luo Yue's people also discriminate against their city's Easterners like this?

"Yue Tui, what do we do?"

Fan Tong felt very embarrassed for wanting a younger person to make the decision, but the more he embarrassed himself, the more thick-skinned he would become. He believed that in the future, he would gradually stop feeling ashamed.

"I don't like fighting, so let's run."

Even if they wanted to fight, the current condition of Yue Tui's body wasn't too suitable for that; however, if they wanted to run... run where? Also, Fan Tong highly doubted his physical strength and running speed would be able to beat these robbers.

"Yue Tui, you can't abandon me. Don't leave!"

Yue Tui stared blankly for a bit and then laughed bitterly.

"I won't leave you and run away by myself, really..."

It's not like that. I was saying that I can't get away anyways. I wanted to tell you to leave me and run away yourself, but it looks like I've created a misunderstanding again.

"Did you not hear me? If you don't hand it over, then we'll take it ourselves."

Actually, Fan Tong also thought that fleeing was a better decision. The mob of

students that Yue Tui had defeated last time during Wushu combat class were all white tassels, but this mob was made up of blue tassels. The difference in ranks was huge, so Fan Tong didn't know if the risk would be successful.

"I'll count to three, then we run."

Yue Tui told him this, and so after counting to three, the two of them immediately broke into a run in the other direction.

Fan Tong was practically following Yue Tui. Even though Yue Tui wasn't feeling well, his running speed was higher and he was more agile than Fan Tong. Fan Tong had almost stumbled over obstacles many times while he was running. He thought, once more, that someone who could disregard those obstacles, like Yue Tui, who seemed like he was running on flat ground, was practically superhuman. To say the least, Fan Tong himself couldn't handle it too well. The sounds behind them revealed that those people weren't too great at running while avoiding obstacles either.

"Tsk..... spell of freezing!"

Blue tassels already had a certain level of strength. Running and throwing Fuzhou to attack their targets wasn't a problem for them yet. They'd probably gotten tired of chasing them on this kind of street as well, so one of them conveniently fished out Fuzhou that had been prepared in advance and promptly tossed one forward at Fan Tong.

Of course Fan Tong had heard the sound of the other person shouting as he or she threw the Fuzhou. He hurriedly dodged to the side and avoided the Fuzhou that luckily, hit the ground. However, forcibly changing direction while sprinting caused him to suddenly lose his balance. One misstep promptly caused him to fall forwards.

"Waaaaahhhhhhh!"

The action for falling down safely, nn, ah, uwah... too late.

Tripping while running was really painful, but it was those terrible guys catching up to them that was truly dangerous. Yue Tui seemed to have noticed that Fan Tong had tripped and circled back around. Fan Tong hadn't yet recovered from the shock of falling. He only saw Yue Tui's silhouette dart past,

then promptly start a fight with those few people.

Yue Tui's hand accurately struck one person's face, beating him back. The presence of a threat caused those people's focus to all shift onto Yue Tui, and they paid no attention to Fan Tong at the side. When Fan Tong saw that Yue Tui had gained the upper hand at the start, Fan Tong was even excited for a bit. However, it seemed that Yue Tui had used up most of his strength after attacking once. His entire body slumped, revealing that his illness' effect.

After dodging several blows, Yue Tui was promptly subdued, and the bag that held the skins and feathers was taken. Even so, they didn't seem content to leave things at that.

"What do you say, how should we punish him?"

"Let's just let him die once and treat it as a lesson for resisting."

After hearing this, of course Fan Tong wanted to prevent this from happening.

"Hey! You've already stolen our unstuff and now what are you trying to do!"

Reversing "stuff" as "unstuff" at this kind of moment isn't funny at all! Hurry up and let Yue Tui go!

"None of your business. Why so noisy, do you want to die too?"

One man kicked Fan Tong in the abdomen, suddenly rendering him unable to continue speaking.

"Cough....."

When Fan Tong recovered his sight and sense of direction once more, the scene he saw was of a man clutching Yue Tui's neck. Fan Tong immediately wanted to throw everything he could find at the man, but there wasn't much trash in this alley, so he could only watch anxiously empty-handed.

At this time, Yue Tui, whose eyes had been closed, opened them. Suddenly Fan Tong was frozen, and those accomplices standing around watching also stopped laughing. That was a kind of atmosphere Fan Tong didn't know how to describe.

Yue Tui hadn't done a single thing, yet everyone felt a chill.

No, I should have said that he hadn't done a single thing yet.....

“What are you doing? Stop!”

A furious voice cut in and shattered this atmosphere. When he looked in the direction the voice had come from, Fan Tong was immediately moved almost to tears.

Oh! Luo Shi! At this time your figure, normally a bit on the delicate side, looks amazingly dependable! We're saved! How wonderful!

After realizing that the interloper was Luo Shi, fortunately the only thing those arrogant guys could do was let go of Yue Tui. When Fan Tong ran over to support Yue Tui, he also hurriedly began speaking to Luo Shi.

“Luo Shi, that bag, it's theirs.....”

It's obviously ours! Gah!

Luo Shi pretty much understood what had happened. His refined face seemed to be shrouded in a layer of frost.

“Return the items you stole from them, and then leave, all of you!”

Hearing Luo Shi's orders, those guys with blue tassels were even more resentful, but they still obediently did as they were told and tossed the bag on the ground. They also maliciously left behind a few words before they departed.

“Simply relying on the influence of the attendants' token, the jade plate, is nothing special. What's so amazing about that?”

Fan Tong heard these words; Luo Shi also heard them. Luo Shi's coloring changed slightly and he clenched his hands tightly, but he let them leave quietly without taking action.

Luo Shi, why on Earth are you holding back? Aren't you supposed to intercept them and violently beat them up one by one in this situation? You're a red tassel, you know. You're stronger than them, so you probably won't lose, right?

Actually, Fan Tong was just unwilling to let go of his resentment. Seeing the red marks remaining on Yue Tui's neck, he believed the members of that nasty crowd really needed to be reborn several times. Maybe it'd make them a bit kinder.

“Yue Tui, are you okay?”

The one Luo Shi first looked at was Yue Tui, and then he turned towards Fan Tong.

“Fan Tong, you’re fine too, aren’t you? You look like you’re probably fine.”

What kind of attitude is this..... am I an afterthought? Even though Yue Tui’s condition looks more alarming, so you’re supposed to care for him first, how can you just decide that I’m fine like this? I think my abdomen really hurts! It might even be bruised! If I was a little unluckier, my internal organs might have ruptured!

Yue Tui, who was being supported by Fan Tong, reached out a hand and brushed his neck, still seeming a bit dispirited. His face regained some expression only when Luo Shi walked in front of him and looked at him.

“Ah... Luo Shi.”

Yue Tui’s eyes were finally able to focus normally. He’d probably be okay now that he’s able to recognize people.

Luo Shi picked up the bag at the side. After looking at its contents, he passed it to Fan Tong and subsequently began speaking.

“You need to hurry up and turn in this kind of thing. It’s more practical to immediately switch to a grass green tassel; leaving it by your side is just inviting trouble.”

“But, we have too many feathers.....”

Luo Shi spent five seconds before realizing that Fan Tong had meant “too few feathers.” He’d only casually glanced at the feathers earlier, so naturally, he had no way of figuring out how many chicken feathers were inside.

“Why didn’t you gather all the chicken feathers first? What were you doing, collecting the chicken skins as well. Killing chickens is more troublesome, and plucking feathers is very easy. Even if you get close to the chicken and pluck all the feathers on its head, it won’t necessarily notice.”

Huh? Then that day, those featherless chickens that weren’t killed but had their feathers plucked were just too lucky. If you asked us why we collected

chicken skins as well, that question really is complicated and hard to answer...

“Don’t walk around in alleys holding that kind of thing, either. Stay on the main roads.”

“We were robbed in public in an alley, and we fled to the main roads.”

My words were reversed, but it’s okay. Luo Shi should be able to interpret it himself at this level.

Hearing that Eastern City’s public security was so lacking, Luo Shi couldn’t help opening his eyes wide.

“How is that possible..... damn, New Residents and their disputes are impossible to manage. During the next conference, I will definitely bring up this problem.....”

Because Yue Tui had been very quiet until now, Fan Tong felt a little uneasy and so promptly tapped Yue Tui’s shoulder.

“Yue Tui?”

Because his condition seemed quite unusual, Fan Tong even waved his hand in front of Yue Tui a few times.

“..... N-nothing’s wrong, I just thought of some things..... I’ll just go back to the dorm today and not go to class. Thank you, Luo Shi.”

Yue Tui said those few sentences, seeming not to be in a very stable state of mind, and then promptly bid Luo Shi goodbye. His speed was so fast that Luo Shi couldn’t react. Fan Tong, too, stood there stupidly, holding the chicken feathers and skins.

Hence, Luo Shi looked towards Fan Tong.

“Fan Tong, you’ll still go to class then? I’m leaving.”

“..... I’m begging you, please protect me on my way back to the dorm.”

To continue surviving, Fan Tong thought, he’s afraid he would become more and more shameless.

Will I become like Mi Zhong in the end — ? Thinking about it like this really makes me uneasy.....

In the end, Luo Shi really accompanied him back to the dorm. Sure enough, Fan Tong had judged Luo Shi correctly: Luo Shi was a good kid; it's just that his words weren't very open sometimes. After parting ways in front of the dorm's door, Fan Tong promptly went upstairs himself and exhaustively pushed open Room 444's door.

"Fan Tong, you're back?"

Someone in the room called out a greeting, but..... it wasn't Yue Tui.

"Wah –"

Fan Tong was startled, immediately wanting to close the door and leave, but Mi Zhong went over and grabbed his hand, not letting him run away.

"I say, Fan Tong, what is the meaning of this? You're so frightened of seeing me that you don't even want to come home..... didn't I say earlier that I wasn't interested in you?"

That really isn't the reason! Don't tell me that you want to steal my chicken skins and feathers too, Mi Zhong? I won't give them to you even if I die!

"Hey, what's in that bag you're carrying?"

Huh? It looks like he doesn't know? Was it a misunderstanding?

"You don't think that it's disrespectful behavior to go out by yourself when there's no one in the room?"

Fan Tong even looked in the shower. No one; there really was no one.

Where did Yue Tui go? Didn't he leave first?

"What do you mean, 'go out'? Isn't it 'break in'? It isn't some maiden's room either, and everyone is so familiar with each other. Standing outside and waiting is tiring, you know; what's wrong with coming inside to rest for a bit?"

Stop pretending to be so familiar. I'm taking offense. Exactly what did you come here to do? Also, it's obviously time for class right now. You never go to class, is that it?

"I just wanted to ask around a bit to see if there's any new gossip. Fan Tong, you're very capable, gaining Lord Luo Shi's attention. I've heard you've also

made connections with Lord Yin Shi? Do you have any tricks of the trade?"

Stop talking as if my job is to sell gossip, okay? Also, basically Lord Yin Shi doesn't even know my name. Even if we met each other face to face, I wouldn't be surprised if he didn't recognize me.

"There's also Lord Ling Shi."

This provocation was a must. He had always been waiting for this opportunity.

"What — !"

Sure enough, Mi Zhong's reaction was very intense. He was so emotional that he clutched Fan Tong's shoulder and repeatedly shook it back and forth like he wanted to shake something out of it.

"Really, that's too much! Why do you make people so envious! Have you spoken with Lord Ling Shi? Have you shaken hands with Lord Ling Shi? Give me anything – are he and Lord Yin Shi having an affair?"

Why do so many people all think that Lord Ling Shi and Lord Yin Shi are having an affair? It's really too mysterious. What exactly has Lord Ling Shi done to Lord Yin Shi, and how over-the-top was it? I would rather believe that Lord Ling Shi is having an affair with the queen. Isn't he by her side even when she's bathing and changing clothes?

Fan Tong wordlessly took out a paper and brush.

"What did you get a brush and paper for? What..... 'I'm not telling you'? What is the meaning of this! And you insisted on writing it to express yourself. This makes me so annoyed! What else did you write... 'My Fuzhou communication charm was personally made by Lord Ling Shi'! Ahhhhh! Sell it to me! I'm begging you! I'll buy it for any price! Fan Tong! I treat you the best, isn't that right –"

Wahahahaha so fun – but I won't sell it to you. It has a built-in function that connects with Lord Yin Shi and Lord Ling Shi's group communication, which is priceless, you know. It might be useful sometime, and if I sell it to you, I won't have it anymore, right?

"I'm offering five thousand strings! Five thousand strings!"

.....! Five thousand strings! Damn! My heart missed a beat! I couldn't tell that Mi Zhong actually had that much money? Wait, he has five thousand strings yet he's still rushing about trying to pay off his debt? Exactly how much money does he owe?

"Only, please let me pay with credit as I have no cash. What do you think?"

Go die.

"Fan Tong! Don't ignore me! I swear that I'll definitely pay it off within a thousand years! I swear!"

Am I getting this wrong? You only plan on paying me five strings a year?! Also, don't carelessly give out this kind of exaggerated figure just because it seems like New Residents only need to switch to a new body in order to continue living, all right?

"..... What are you doing?"

Zhu Sha, who'd returned from school, finally helped shoo away this weird person. Mi Zhong even insisted on reminding Fan Tong of his communication charm's code, wanting Fan Tong to contact him if Fan Tong changed his mind. Of course this was impossible, though.

But by the time they were about to go to bed, Yue Tui still hadn't returned.

Yue Tui, where did you go?

It was time for bed, trouble had just started today, and going out in the middle of the night was dangerous. Fan Tong, however, still decided to go out to look for Yue Tui. Zhu Sha, though, decided to stay in the room and look after the chicken feathers and skins.

As Fan Tong was leaving, he ran into Bi Rou once again. After a somewhat incoherent exchange, Bi Rou managed to get a relative sense of the situation and volunteered to come along and search.

In reality, Fan Tong really wished that she would call Yin Shi or Ling Shi to come help. They'd probably find Yue Tui very quickly. However, he just couldn't open his mouth to ask. He truly believed the problem was that he wasn't thick-skinned

enough.

“I’ve got it, I’ve got it! I think he should be outside the city in the southwestern area. We can probably find him if we search in that direction.”

You think?

Fan Tong thought that Bi Rou was also very mysterious. After she closed her eyes for a while, she suddenly said those words. However, Fan Tong didn’t have a basis with which to dismiss her words, so he could only follow her out of the city, searching in the southwestern direction.

They hadn’t seen anyone even after walking quite a ways along the road, but if they continued walking, they’d approach a dangerous area. Fan Tong hesitated a bit, but Bi Rou didn’t have any intention of returning, so he just continued to walk with her.

According to the map Mi Zhong gave me in the past, if we keep going, we really will be slaughtered by wild creatures. Yue Tui, are you really there? Why did you go to such a dangerous place?

“Ah, found him.”

Bi Rou pointed in front of her. There really was a person’s shadow in that direction. Fan Tong recognized him by that head of golden hair; he was standing right before a crack in the ground, silhouetted against the luminous moon in the distance. Thanks to the moonlight, he could be seen very clearly with a quick glance.

“Yue Tui!”

Fan Tong called to him from a distance, but he didn’t react, nor did he turn around. After the two of them jogged closer to him, Bi Rou went over and touched the back of his hand, also thinking that something was strange.

“Yue Tui, why did you come to this kind of place? We were very worried about you..... ah!”

When Yue Tui turned his head and caught sight of Bi Rou, he suddenly threw her hand off and retreated one step. When Fan Tong and Bi Rou looked at him, they were astonished and scared speechless by the expression in his eyes.

It was an expression that conveyed absolute hatred. When he fixed that kind of gaze on Bi Rou, she felt completely terrified and confused.

Why was that kind of hatred directed at her?

Fan Tong, too, couldn't figure out what was going on. He had never seen Yue Tui behave this way and had no idea that the feeling of hatred could be manifested so tangibly in someone's eyes.

"..... My apologies. What was I doing just now? Fan Tong, Bi Rou, why did you come here?"

All of a sudden, that kind of terrifying feeling disappeared. Standing in front of them was the Yue Tui they remembered, speaking to them with a warm expression.

Only, there still seemed to be a faint trace of anguish within that warmth.

"It should be us asking why you came here! You hadn't returned by midnight. Everyone was really worried about you!"

Probably wanting to disguise her previous frightened state of mind, Bi Rou spoke chidingly. Her words sounded almost accusing.

"Uh..... I just came out here to relieve my boredom. I'm sorry. Let's go back."

After Yue Tui's simple apology, he promptly indicated that he wanted to go back with them. After all, finding him was the most important. He seemed like he didn't want to explain anything at all, so trying to dig deeper most likely wouldn't get them anywhere.

A mystery was formed tonight, and it didn't seem like it will be solved anytime soon.

© Fan Tong's Afterword

Regarding my so-called friends, is it better to become closer or maintain ordinary friendly relations?

To me, I want to chance continuing to care about him. Even though the deeper I dig the less pure he will seem to me, at least he's a good person with a

seemingly pure personality. If his background isn't pure, then that's also the fault of the person who corrupted him.

Today, even though we succeeded in protecting the chicken skins and feathers and also put Mi Zhong in his place, I don't seem to feel very happy.

Ah – I always feel very depressed about situations I can't understand –

Also, how has being with Bi Rou affected things? Is it actually possible that you are also secretly in love with her, Yue Tui, so you were jealous? I think the me who has these kinds of thoughts is quite shallow. Am I just thoughtlessly searching for a reason to escape this mystery?

Anyways, I hope that after getting up early tomorrow morning, everything will return to normal. I also hope that Yue Tui can be a bit happier. I like it when he reveals that whole-hearted smile. While people are young, they should smile more. It's the same for Luo Shi – is it popular for handsome young men these days to pretend to be cool by not smiling?

I think this is even more depressing – I can't look cool even if I don't smile. What exactly is the problem here, my face or my personality?

Next: [Chapter 4: This is my...weapon?](#)

Previous: [Chapter 2: Flashing Lights Are Prohibited](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translators: Sherry, Nannyn

Proofreaders: Radhasings, Charlote, PiKairi, Nannyn, Ayanora, Sherry

Fan Tong is saying he's trying not to jinx himself.

← [Chapter 2: Flashing Lights are Prohibited](#) [Chapter 4 So This is My... Weapon...?](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

2 Comments so far:

1.  *kensche* says:

[January 22, 2015 at 2:22 pm](#)

Thank ya very much for the translation translators! Many thanks towards the Author!!

[Reply](#)



2. *Tyrael* says:

[January 16, 2014 at 5:31 pm](#)

Thanks for the chapter!
The mystery deepens.

[Reply](#)

Chapter 4: So This is My... Weapon...?

On November 24, 2013, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [18 Comments](#)

“Truly a match made in heaven.” – Luo Shi

“Amazing, I really want one too.” – Yin Shi

“...” – Fan Tong

When it was time to go to school the next morning, Fan Tong and Yue Tui both got out of bed on time. Zhu Sha, however, still slept soundly in bed. Perhaps he'd stayed up too late waiting for Yue Tui last night. With this situation, Fan Tong and Yue Tui looked at each other in dismay.

“What should we do?”

“He said before that we better not bother him when he's sleeping...”

When they'd first met, Zhu Sha had made this clear to them. Because he had specifically warned them of this matter, it'd be better to follow his request.

It's just that, Zhu Sha is a hardworking student who takes learning very seriously. Letting him oversleep and miss classes like that, will he be angry with us...?

“Should we wake him up?”

Yue Tui seemed a bit conflicted.

“Who should do it?”

Fan Tong didn't want to try. Zhu Sha already had some complaints about him. If Fan Tong also disturbed his sleep, Zhu Sha might even give him a good beating.

“...Let's just respect his warning. Don't wake him up.”

Yue Tui didn't have the courage to wake him up either, so the two decided to go to school by themselves. There's still a good chance they would run into robbers today, though. What should they do?

“I’ll also carry the items this time. Those people are primarily targeting me.”

Yue Tui made his decision about how to deal with the robbers.

“There’s nothing wrong with my body today, so I will deal with this. Fan Tong, you should just... stay away from me.”

His decision really made Fan Tong unhappy. Having to walk separately and pretend to not know each other despite leaving the house together, just thinking about it made him uncomfortable.

“Yue Tui, tomorrow, you...”

Fan Tong wanted to ask him about what happened yesterday, but he said “tomorrow” instead.

“...? Tomorrow? Is something the matter?”

No, nothing. Saying “tomorrow” makes it sound like I’m trying to go out with him, what the...

Stepping down the stairs, they noticed a disturbance in front of the dorm. Walking out, they saw the reason: Luo Shi and Yin Shi were standing at the doorway.

Luo Shi and Yin Shi.....? No matter how much you look at it, they don’t seem to be people that’d walk together?

“Yue Tui, Fan Tong!”

After Luo Shi caught sight of them, he promptly called out their names. Since they were summoned, the two immediately walked towards Luo Shi.

“Luo Shi, you were waiting for us?”

Yue Tui looked at Luo Shi and asked, slightly amazed.

“I... I definitely am not here specifically to wait for you, it’s just that I was coincidentally passing by... it’s just that Yin Shi said he wanted to come, so I thought I might as well come along!”

In response to Yue Tui’s question, Luo Shi immediately launched into a flustered and slightly awkward denial.

“Xiao Luo Shi, you also know them, huh? How strange.”

Yin Shi approached them, asking in an amazed tone of voice.

Lord Yin Shi, could I trouble you to stand a bit farther away? Don't come any closer. So, so radiant – Being so handsome for no apparent reason, are you trying to become the enemy of all men? Also, after you came towards us, the number of gazes focusing on us instantly multiplied exponentially. What intense pressure...

“The fact that you know them is even stranger!”

Luo Shi looked at Yin Shi incredulously. Fan Tong completely approved of his opinion.

“Nn? They're friends of Xiao Rou, so they're my friends too, you know, though I only have a faint impression of a certain person among them. Since that person showed up together with them, I'm probably correct, aren't I?”

Forgive me, is it wrong to look so plain? The person you only have a faint impression of is me, isn't it? After running me over once and striking me with lightning once, you still don't remember me? Exactly what do you want me to do?

“Ah, I remember now.”

Yin Shi clapped his hands, looking happy for remembering it.

“Why have you recovered from your injury already? Could it be that you died in the end?”

...Don't ask this question like it's something as casual as, “Did you eat dinner already,” okay? I'd rather you didn't remember me. Also, don't jinx me.

“What did you do to him?”

Upon hearing that, Luo Shi immediately questioned Yin Shi accusingly. His face revealed that he knew at once that it was Yin Shi's fault without even asking. It seemed like he truly understood Yin Shi.

“Ah! Xiao Rou! I was suffering immensely while waiting for you!”

Just then, Xiao Rou walked out of the dorm. Yin Shi immediately ignored Luo Shi and greeted Bi Rou.

“Ah! Yin Shi!”

Bi Rou seemed pleasantly surprised to see Yin Shi. A beautiful smile blossomed on her face.

“Xiao Rou, I missed you so much, give me a hug.”

“Mm.”

Stop this! Don’t act all lovey-dovey in front of the dorm! Lord Ling Shi, where are you?! Hurry up and break up this disrespectful duo!

“What’s happening to this world...”

Luo Shi seemed stunned at seeing such an unbelievable event. He’d just found out that the one Yin Shi was waiting for was a girl.

“There’s no way Yin Shi would have a lover, right? Being such an idiot and all.”

His words really hit the nail on the head.

“Xiao Rou, I’ll take you to class.”

“Yin Shi, you’re not busy?”

“Ah, I’m a little busy, but I’m so bored, and I miss you so much. Last time, that old man was able to spend more time than I did with you, and I’m not happy about it.”

“I miss you so much too. Next time, let’s go kill chickens again.”

Cough! If you want to talk, do it a bit farther apart from each other! Don’t glue yourselves together like that! ...Anyways, if you’re going to kill chickens, just remember to bring us with you.

Everyone watching the commotion, either directly from the dorm gates or by peeking through the windows upstairs, gaped with jaws wide open. This was definitely the juiciest piece of gossip lately – Lord Yin Shi has a lover, and that lover is a Western girl.

Such an explosive piece of gossip would probably have spread throughout Eastern City by noon, right? If I’d known this earlier, I would have sold it to Mi Zhong and made some money first.

“Xiao Luo Shi, I’m going to leave first with Xiao Rou. Don’t let yourself be

bullied.”

So you finally remembered that Luo Shi exists, huh?

“Who would bully me?”

Luo Shi rebutted with a sour expression on his face.

“Because Xiao Luo Shi is cute like a girl, so...”

“You can get lost now.”

Oh, Luo Shi, your words speak my heart.

Bi Rou tugged on Yin Shi’s hand, and they left happily. As she did so, Bi Rou noticed the others and waved. Not being completely ignored was truly touching...

“Do you have free time today after school?”

Luo Shi had personally waited for them in front of the dorm, so of course there’s a reason. Yin Shi had already left, so he should get down to business too.

So you want to arrange to meet again? Are we going out to eat? Fine with me. That’s great.

“We’re free.”

Yue Tui answered in Fan Tong’s place. Anyways, if he was free, Fan Tong was also free. They had similar schedules.

“Let’s meet in front of the school again. I’ll bring you guys out to buy weapons.”

Oh...?

Probably because both of them were so surprised, Luo Shi felt embarrassed and promptly looked for another explanation.

“You were robbed yesterday, and I also heard that you were bullied in Resource Area 1 before, so... I think that, if you have weapons, they would be of some help...”

Luo Shi, you’re really such a kind-hearted kid. You’re obviously doing this out of the goodness of your heart, so there’s no need to be so shy about it.

“Weapons...”

Yue Tui propped his chin in his hand as he assessed the situation, and then glanced at Fan Tong.

“His offer sounds pretty good, maybe?”

Hey, why did you look at me before you said that? You think that I’m the only person who needs it, and you don’t, is that right?

“Money!”

To Fan Tong, money was the important thing. Even if he was taken to a weapon store, he couldn’t buy anything without money.

“I can pay for you. You can just pay me back later.”

Luo Shi decided to lend them money, recognizing that he’d probably injure their pride if he footed the bill. This way, it was less embarrassing for them.

I still owe you five strings, you know. Isn’t it bad for me to owe you more and more? What’s the approximate price for a weapon anyways? Are you certain that I’ll be able to earn that much money?

“Then, meet me at the school gates after school. Don’t forget.”

“Okay, thank you.”

Yue Tui was as polite as ever, but instead of being excited at the thought of owning a weapon, Fan Tong was more concerned about whether or not Luo Shi would invite them to eat again afterwards.

Before they left, Luo Shi kindly allowed them to leave their skins and feathers at his place for safekeeping, so they felt much more relieved walking to school today.

During the morning Shufa Xuan class, Fan Tong spent the entire time napping. Blind Teacher’s judgment was actually very accurate — Fan Tong really didn’t have a gift for Shufa. He didn’t understand a single thing taught in class. Compared to the person sitting next to him, Yue Tui, a genius found only once in a hundred years, he was as different as night and day. Watching Yue Tui learn

more interesting Shufa, Fan Tong was immensely depressed inside.

“You don’t need to come to class, you know. Sitting in the classroom will just be a waste of time, student Fan Tong.”

As a good role model, don’t say that kind of thing, okay? Be careful or I’ll change your nickname to Poison Tongued Teacher, all right?

“It’s impossible for someone with no imagination to grasp the concept. Attending more classes won’t help.”

Could it be that his original world hampered his imagination so much that he lost his talent? Was it a problem that he’d known Santa Claus wasn’t real as a little kid? Was it wrong to recognize the cruelty of reality too early? Even he too curled up under the blankets before, so afraid of that he couldn’t sleep, okay?

This has nothing to do with Peter Pan! I can’t accept this!

“Yue Tui, what exactly is a pure imagination?”

Since Yue Tui was so talented at Shufa, asking him was probably the fastest.

“Huh?”

Yue Tui was noticeably perplexed when he was asked this question.

“I also don’t know how to describe it... maybe it’s like, being able to imagine that public rations are actually very delicious. Something like that...?”

If that was the case, Zhu Sha would definitely be more talented than you. I forgot that geniuses aren’t necessarily good at teaching, my bad.

“Oh, it’s similar to understanding every creature and object around you, and taking in every event and feeling as if you actually experienced it. That might be a better explanation.”

That sounds even more abstract to me. In your original example, I could still understand why there won’t ever be hope for me, but what does it mean to feel everything as if I experienced it or to understand every creature and thing?

“I don’t get it. How do you understand and feel as if something has actually happened to you after you’ve experienced it?”

“What you said seems a bit complicated. Are you saying that, even after

you've experienced something, you're still unable to understand it? Then... most likely there really is no hope for you, Fan Tong. It's happened to you, but you still can't feel it? What does that even..."

I was saying that, if you'd never experienced it, how can you feel like you did... If I've never had a girlfriend, how would I know what it feels like to have a girlfriend? I've never been a millionaire, so how would I know what kind of thoughts will rise up in me while holding three thousand strings?

"Fan Tong, try to imagine putting yourself in someone else's shoes. It's okay even if what you imagine isn't necessarily correct."

Yue Tui tried to explain the so-called pure imagination, but after Fan Tong tried it a few times and forced his mind to the limit, he gave up in the end.

Was he the kind of person who supposedly has no dreams, but just says that he does?

"Don't be too sad. Fan Tong, you're learning Fuzhou quite well."

Fan Tong silently accepted Yue Tui's attempt to console him. In Fuzhou class later this afternoon, they would learn how to use Fuzhou energy and officially put their Fuzhou to use. Fan Tong was actually looking forward to this.

Even though they'd attended class for a few days, they still frequently went the wrong way or couldn't find the Fuzhou classroom. Sometimes they got lucky and found the classroom, which even made them happy for half the day. Generally, when they couldn't find the classroom, they asked others for help. Luckily, friendly students still existed, and if they asked around, there were always people willing to give them directions.

Of course, Fan Tong and Yue Tui didn't want to be late for their first lesson on Fuzhou energy. In any case, they ditched lunch and got to class extremely early, sitting properly in their seats until the teacher arrived. The class then began a while later.

Normal Teacher first explained the directions and rules of Fuzhou energy – how to interact with and cultivate it. At this point, Fan Tong still felt that everything was going well. The lecture was understandable, and he really did perceive a peculiar power pulsing within his body.

Following that was an explanation about how to output Fuzhou energy from the body and transmit it to objects. The so-called objects included charms, Fuzhou communication charms, etc. Synchronizing Fuzhou energy and the charm was also an art form. After finishing the preliminary teachings, Normal Teacher promptly took out a stack of Driven Fire charms that had been prepared ahead of time and passed three to each student, letting everyone try activating it.

It wasn't proper to perform this kind of test in the classroom, so Normal Teacher promptly brought everyone to an area specifically created for Fuzhou Xuan. Everyone could freely set off this kind of low level Fuzhou without being afraid of damaging the area. The students immediately began trying out the Fuzhou one by one.

Holding the Fuzhou in his hand, Fan Tong was brimming with confidence. He faced the space in front of him, sent Fuzhou energy into the Fuzhou, and then threw it.

“!”

The Fuzhou he cast into the air turned into a worthless piece of paper instantly and drifted to the ground.

Fan Tong's expression looked terribly bad.

“Fan Tong, this is a charm for .”

Yue Tui didn't understand what Fan Tong was doing. Fan Tong had definitely listened carefully to the teacher's explanation a moment ago.

“I didn't know...”

I was saying that I know. Dammit! I'd completely forgotten that I also needed to call out the charm's proper name! I'm ruined, my life is already ruined...

“It's all right. Now you know, so why don't you try again. You still have two charms.”

It's no use, you know – I already knew that it was a charm for Yu Huo Zhou —

And just like this, Fan Tong's dream of becoming a Fuzhou expert shattered to pieces. Yue Tui's grasp of Fuzhou energy also seemed far from perfect. Perhaps

Yue Tui was naturally unsuited for this subject.

Becoming a Fuzhoushi, possessing an incredible amount of strength, then increasing it gradually... The original blueprint for his future has now all come to nothing. From the inside out, Fan Tong was in a dispirited state.

If he was to forever be a commoner in this world, remaining in the lowest social class, his life was honestly discouraging. Even if he could become a , all he could do was make money. He got to live in a world filled with magic and fantastical beings, but he was useless in everything. That really was no fun at all.

And so, when they met up with Luo Shi in front of campus, Fan Tong still wore a bleak expression, with no intentions on revitalizing his spirits.

“What happened to him?”

Startled, Luo Shi turned towards Yue Tui and asked him a question. Yue Tui gave him a simple explanation of the reason for Fan Tong’s gloominess.

“No talent for Shufa, an inability to read out Fuzhou... Fan Tong, you’re pitiful.”

Fan Tong was bowled over by Luo Shi’s adding insult to injury.

“Since it’s like this, shouldn’t you work harder on your Wushu? Putting effort into practicing Wushu produces results too, so you still have some hope, right?”

Luo Shi’s suggestion completely failed to make Fan Tong happier. Wushu was the first subject Fan Tong ruled out because he believed that he wasn’t made for Wushu. Now having to pick it back up and treat it as his only hope was a bit too depressing.

Sigh, Eastern City doesn’t teach subjects from Luo Yue, so they only have Shufa, Fuzhou, and Wushu. Otherwise, didn’t they say there’s magic and curses over at Luo Yue? Perhaps he could learn those. As for Luo Yue’s swordsmanship classes, since there’s a sword involved, there’s no hope in that area either.

“So, let’s go pick out a suitable weapon for you. If you have a good weapon, you’ll start off at a more advantageous place. Who knows, maybe you’ll learn Wushu unexpectedly well.”

No way. There's no way that'll happen. Rather than practicing Wushu, I think practicing escape techniques would probably be more productive.

Naturally, Luo Shi was the one leading them to the weapon store. On the way there, Fan Tong's mood slightly improved. He'd heard that this world's weapons knew how to speak, which was certainly worth a look. He treated this as an opportunity to see the world.

"Luo Shi, what about your weapon?"

Fan Tong couldn't help but be curious. With Luo Shi's status, it was only right for him to possess an extremely high quality weapon.

"I specialize in Fuzhou, so I don't have a weapon."

As Luo Shi said this, he took out a long strip with symbols engraved on it and continued speaking.

"Honestly speaking, I just use this most of the time, but this isn't a weapon. It's called , and it's primarily used as an amplifier. It strengthens the effectiveness of Fuzhou and activates Fuzhou of higher difficulty, but it uses up a lot of energy, so I generally don't use it much."

Finishing his explanation, he put away the Fu Yin. It seemed the object couldn't speak, so Fan Tong was a bit disappointed. But remembering that he'll see tons of them at the store, Fan Tong acceded.

So far, he hadn't really seen the special weapons here. Most of the students he normally saw didn't have their own weapons yet, or they didn't show them off for some reason. Plus he'd only gone to Wushu combat class once...

As for people who should have good weapons, Luo Shi said he didn't use one; Ling Shi also uses Fuzhou, but he's so skilled that he doesn't need paper. In contrast, he wasn't sure if Yin Shi was trying to be funny or something, but last time, he'd only taken out a fruit knife to mess around, so Fan Tong still hadn't seen a talking weapon up until now.

He seemed to have discussed the type of weapon he wanted with Yue Tui before. He remembered Yue Tui saying that a normal weapon was fine, that even an inferior one was okay. Fan Tong still didn't understand what Yue Tui was thinking.

They arrived at the weapon store before long. Judging from the storefront, the shop probably had quite a long history. When Luo Shi brought them inside, there were no other customers. The owner even hung a sign on the door saying they were on break after they went in.

“Lord Luo Shi, please take your time and browse all you like.”

“Mm.”

This... is this is what they call “booking the entire theater”? Sure enough, those with status do things differently from ordinary people...

The owner of the weapon store seemingly wanted to let them choose on their own, so after greeting them, he sat down behind the front desk. Luo Shi then put on some special gloves he found in the store and began explaining.

“Weapons with intelligence are mostly kept in the storeroom in the back. They can speak and also have their own thoughts. Every weapon’s personality is different. When you touch one, it will begin conversing with you. One aspect it examines is your strength; another aspect is whether or not it likes you, which it determines by means of conversation. Hm – although building up a good image so the weapon likes you is very important, it’s still better to express your real thoughts. Otherwise, if you don’t get along in the future, it’s not such a smart idea anymore. It’s better not to trick others into master recognition.”

“Master recognition?”

“These weapons need to undergo a master recognition ceremony in order to bring out their greatest assets, and also, if the weapon refuses to recognize you as its master, the owner won’t sell it to you. It’s possible for one person to possess more than one weapon as long as the weapons get along with each other. There’s no problem on the amount of weapons you like carrying, but if they can’t stand each other, the one who’s inconvenienced is you.”

Sounds so bothersome. Isn’t it just a tool to make yourself stronger? Why do you still have to cultivate interpersonal relationships and go about it like you need to win its favor...

“The glove I’m wearing now has an isolation effect. Later I’ll be in charge of handing you the weapons so you can try them. There are many weapons, so

we'll probably be able to find one suitable for you. It's just that it might take some time."

So you want to act as the salesperson and serve us? I'm honored.

"Let's go to the storeroom then."

And so, Fan Tong and Yue Tui followed Luo Shi to the storeroom.

The storeroom's lights shone dimly. The lit area was filled with the sound of voices talking.

"So bright! You scared me to death! I'm sleeping, you know!"

"Did some customers arrive? Did some customers arrive? I've already been unsellable for a long time."

"I beg you, please don't look at me. I don't want to leave my dear family yet – "

So noisy.

There were weapons of all kinds in the storeroom. Though there might not have been a thousand, there were at least a hundred. Even if each weapon only spoke a single sentence, it was already enough to make the room unbearably noisy. How could anyone choose a weapon when it was so noisy? This really was a big problem, and even Yue Tui's forehead had wrinkled up.

"Hey hey, what do you think of these customers?"

"You can't tell what they're like just by looking at them. Are you asking what I think about their appearances? The master of my dreams should be a beautiful girl – "

"There is one, isn't that one a bishojo?"

"Can't you see that he's wearing the isolation glove?! He's helping others choose, not here to buy anything!"

Luo Shi's expression was kind of dark. The reason for this was probably because he'd been mistakenly thought of as a bishojo again. He was obviously wearing well-fitting clothes, and you can tell just by looking that he didn't have

a chest. These weapons really didn't have any eyes.

Nn... from the weapons' designs, it doesn't seem like they have eyes or mouths, so exactly what do they use to see, and what do they use to speak?

"This place is very sinister. I can't tell which weapon is speaking..."

For once, Fan Tong's quiet complaints weren't twisted by the curse. After hearing them, Yue Tui gave a response.

"It's not like that. It's really easy to tell them apart. I can hear which weapon is speaking."

You really can't be human...

"When that bishounen looks at me, I feel my heart beating so quickly!"

Bishounen? Is it Yue Tui? Because Luo Shi is a bishojo... in any case, there's no way it could be me.

"You need to have the spirit of a sword! How could you be taken captive with a single glance? You should be pickier about choosing your lifelong happiness!"

"It's because you're like this that you're unable to find your match! How many years has it been?"

Hey... about that, we came to find partners for battle, not for blind dates and marriage proposals, okay?

"So noisy. I'll call the owner to deal with this."

It seemed as if Luo Shi was also bothered by the noise, so he promptly left the storeroom to call the owner.

Someone who sells weapons must have some method of dealing with them, right? Everyone had this thought. When Luo Shi brought back the owner, the latter clapped his hands, cleared his throat, and promptly began to shout at the weapons.

"Quiet down! Quiet down! Lord Luo Shi is here; you can't be disrespectful!"

They didn't expect his shouting to make the inside of the storeroom even noisier instead.

"Who'd listen to you? Get lost."

“Lord Luo Shi? Is he one of the five attendants of Eastern City? Could you autograph my beautiful and flawless body? This will definitely increase my value! Only, which one was he again?”

“BLAHBLAHBLAHBLAH...”

“LALALALALALALALA...”

What an unimpressive store owner.

“Lord Luo Shi, I apologize. They’ve never understood proper etiquette. I probably don’t have a way to make them quiet down, but if there’s anything you want to know about weapons, I could still recommend some or introduce them to you...”

Cold sweat appeared on the owner’s forehead as he apologized fearfully. Luo Shi also had no way out.

“Forget it. You just stand nearby and see if you can help us with anything.”

“Yes.”

So he really is a member of the ruling class. Others listen to whatever he says.

“Do you have a preference for any of the weapons? Why don’t you just randomly pick one up and see.”

“How about... a knife then.”

At least Fan Tong had held a kitchen knife before in his previous world, though he couldn’t handle it very well. He’d cut his own hand when he was trying to cut vegetables, leading to unwanted additives in his food, so he later switched to foods that he could handle without needing a kitchen knife... However, something more familiar was better, so Fan Tong promptly chose knives first.

“A knife, huh... then, why don’t you try this one out.”

Using the hand that was wearing the isolation glove, Luo Shi randomly took a knife from the shelf they were laid out in and put it into Fan Tong’s hand. When Fan Tong gripped the handle, an astonishing feeling immediately rose up. This was probably what was called interaction through direct contact.

“Puh! So weak! Not a single bit of strength! I don’t want to be with you! If I go

with you, I'll definitely have no future!"

It looked like he'd picked an arrogant knife that looked down on him. And since this knife had already clearly spoken words of rejection, Luo Shi didn't say anything more. He immediately took the knife out of Fan Tong's hand and put it back.

"Just... just like this?"

Fan Tong felt a bit baffled. He hadn't done anything at all, nor did he speak a single sentence.

"The next one will be better."

Luo Shi's reply was also very mysterious, but he'd already handed over another knife, so Fan Tong accepted it for now.

That strange feeling of two hearts connecting came again. After he grasped the knife, it first made an "nn" sound, it was probably in the process of evaluating his state of being. Then, Luo Shi asked for his opinion first.

"Fan Tong, what do you think of this knife?"

"Nothing special."

He originally wanted to say "pretty good," but he didn't expect that what he said would become like this. The knife he was holding immediately became furious.

"You're nothing special yourself! Also, I don't want to have a master who's called ! Then everyone will say I am a knife who belongs to ! It sounds terrible! If you want to be picky about other people, you should check to see if you have the qualifications for it first!"

This knife seemed to have parted with Fan Tong on bad terms as well. Luo Shi wordlessly put the knife away and then sighed.

"I think knives probably aren't very suitable. Why don't we try a different kind of weapon?"

No, that's not the problem. I don't think the problem is that they aren't suitable... you really can't tell what the problem is?

During all this, Yue Tui stood on the sidelines watching the commotion. He also glanced at the weapons on the shelves from time to time but seemed to have no intention of participating in weapon selection.

“Let’s try swords this time. Here, take it.”

Luo Shi took a sword from the sword rack and handed it to Fan Tong, who reluctantly accepted it.

After being grasped in Fan Tong’s hand, this sword immediately began speaking in a slightly arrogant manner.

“Look at the lines on my body, then look at my design and my luster. What do you think of me?”

Someone who asked these kinds of questions probably wanted to receive praise. Fan Tong didn’t know whether to honestly voice his thoughts or not. In the end, he chose to praise the sword, but the words he said became like this:

“How terrible. Your lines are coarse, your design is garish, and your luster is an eyesore. It’s my first time seeing such an ugly sword.”

Saying this kind of thing really wasn’t his original intention.

After listening to his words, the sword immediately went crazy.

“I don’t want a master with such a vulgar mouth! Go find someone more qualified than me!”

What a coincidence. I, too, don’t want such a narcissistic sword. Why don’t we go our separate ways...

Luo Shi put back the deranged sword and helplessly fixed his gaze on Fan Tong.

“Fan Tong, is it truly impossible for that mouth of yours to say anything nice?”

Being asked that question, naturally Fan Tong felt utterly wronged.

You definitely know it’s the curse’s fault, yet you still ask me this —

“Fan Tong, even if that sword really looked a bit coarse, with a slightly garish design and a luster that didn’t look that great, there’s no need for you to tell it that. Isn’t it all right for you to just say it in your heart...?”

Yue Tui commented, using a tone of voice that showed his sympathy for the sword.

So you completely agree with my criticisms after my words were reversed. Your aesthetic standards are quite high, aren't they?

"Yue Tui, what about you? Why don't you pick out a weapon too?"

There was a thick air of hopelessness on Fan Tong's side. Luo Shi simply turned to Yue Tui, planning to select a weapon for the latter.

"Eh? No, I don't need one. It doesn't matter..."

Seeing that Luo Shi's attention was on himself, Yue Tui immediately waved his hands in refusal. However, Luo Shi had already randomly picked out a knife and shoved it into his hand.

"It won't hurt to look around. Isn't it always an inconvenience, not having a weapon?"

As the knife was already in his hand, Yue Tui involuntarily gripped it. But the strange thing was that not a second later, the knife let out a bloodcurdling scream.

"Wah! Let me go! Remove your hand! Bloody murderer—bloody murderer—help me—don't touch me! Stay away from me—"

A knife that could scream that desperately was something unheard of. The ear-grating sound scared Luo Shi so much that he immediately took the knife back. He frantically tossed it back to its original spot and finally, the shrilly sound quieted down.

"Knife! Are you alright?"

"Hu...Sword...I'm dying. Tell Whip for me: 'Don't ever forget about our eternal love'".

"Knife! Knife! You can't die! If you die, what am I going to do? You promised me that we would go see Lunar Crescent Blade-Skies and Four Stringed Sword-Tian Luo Yan! Knife!"

Fan Tong wordlessly listened to the overdramatic act before him. He had heard those similar words somewhere before, but having swords playing it out before his eyes made him feel really uncomfortable.

“Why would it react like that? How strange.”

Luo Shi was puzzled even after much thinking. It was clear that he had trouble accepting the situation.

I’ll say, shouldn’t you be first worrying about that knife’s life or death? It’s not even speaking anymore. And the store owner over there who has been standing still for quite a long time already, shouldn’t you be over here worrying about your merchandise? It said it was dying!

“Did the knife really just die?”

Yue Tui’s expression appeared very apologetic. Ah, but if it was me, suddenly killing a knife really would be a big burden on my mind.

“Owner, is that knife dead?”

Luo Shi probably couldn’t figure it out and therefore asked the idle store owner standing at the side.

“Lord Luo Shi, you don’t have to worry. The problems during the selection process are due to the low quality of my store’s weapons. My shop is taking on all the manufacturing costs right now, but I will definitely improve it in the future.”

The owner replied in an awed manner. So they still didn’t know if it died or not. Also, the way he replied was like a heartless human trafficker.

“I don’t believe you...”

Luo Shi grabbed a sword from another shelf and gave it to Yue Tui. The same sort of situation happened once again.

“Ah—no—someone save me—let me go! Please release me! Don’t be like this! I’m begging you—”

Hearing it, it appeared that...well, nothing.

Yue Tui quickly handed the sword back to Luo Shi, and the latter’s frown grew

deeper.

“How is this possible...”

“Luo Shi, I really don’t need one.”

Yue Tui tried hard insisting that he didn’t need a weapon, but it seemed like Luo Shi was still unable to accept it.

“I don’t believe it. We should try one more time. This time we’ll find one of better quality.”

Immediately after he said those words, the weapons in the warehouse that had witnessed two victims’ sacrifice became fearful.

“Don’t select me! I’m just a rotten sword! I won’t be able to stand this torment!”

“Don’t put me in that person’s hands! Don’t do such a cruel thing to me! The elderly me won’t be able to survive!”

“Don’t come over here—the bow opposite of me is pretty good! I can’t compare to him! Select him!”

“How dare you try to harm me despite our years of friendship!”

“Ahhhhhhhhh—”

A crowd of panic-stricken weapons began to yell at the same time. The volume and force of their shouts was astonishing.

“Luo Shi, forget about it; they are that scared...”

Yue Tui said it once again, and this time Luo Shi reluctantly nodded his head and the storm quieted down.

Congratulations Yue Tui, this way you won’t become a weapon killer.

Although he had given up on getting Yue Tui a weapon, Luo Shi’s mood sank very low. Not knowing the reason for the sword’s fear was very frustrating. Under these circumstances, the one who was responsible for answering questions was obviously the owner again.

“Owner, why did that happen again? Why would it be like this...”

I'm pretty sure the owner doesn't know either; don't make it difficult for him.

"This...I've only seen this sort of situation happen to one other person...I'm really not sure of the reason..."

"Another person? Who?"

Luo Shi immediately asked; Fan Tong was also very curious.

So this sort of extreme situation actually happened more than once. How mysterious. What kind of person was the other customer? This kind of thing surely needs some investigation.

"It was Lord Yin Shi. The last time Lord Yin Shi visited my shop, he also made it very noisy and chaotic...ah...yes, it was a similar situation...in order to placate the weapons that had been traumatized, we even had to close shop for three days..."

...Lord Yin Shi? Are you sure the reason the weapons were traumatized wasn't his strange way of speaking?

"Ah! Lord Yin Shi? Don't bring up that terrifying man!"

"Right! I almost died back then! Even now, I still tremble whenever his name is mentioned!"

"But he agreed to my request and left an inscription on my body as a souvenir. I think he's a good man..."

An inscription as a souvenir? What did he inscribe? Yin Shi was here?

"Yin Shi?"

Luo Shi was confused and surprised when he heard the name.

"Then how did you resolve the situation? Did he even buy anything?"

Yes, yes. What did he leave with? A fruit knife?

"Yin Shi asked if there were any broken weapons around. He then picked out a knife and left looking very satisfied..."

People usually return broken things, yet Lord Yin Shi had deliberately bought a broken knife...it definitely was something Lord Yin Shi would do.

“A broken weapon? It wouldn’t have any attack power right? Did he buy that knife so he could use it like a stick and beat people up?”

Luo Shi could not understand at all. However, if he had been asking the owner, then his questions were a little bit too hard for the owner to answer. Instead, he should have asked the perpetrator himself.

Also, wasn’t Yin Shi the head of Shufa Xuan? What could he do with something that had nothing to do with Shufa?

“If you sell broken weapons, I would like to have one.”

Not only did Yue Tui not exclude broken weapons, he even wanted to take one home. Fan Tong and Luo Shi gave him a slightly strange look.

There’s another person here who wants a broken weapon. Why are broken things so popular these days?

“That kind of thing is not good!”

“But I think it’ll be fine. I can’t even hold the weapons here anyways, so I’ll just buy a broken one. It doesn’t matter if it’s a knife or a sword.”

The situation probably only could be solved this way. After making sure things were unlikely to change either way, Luo Shi looked at Fan Tong.

Luo Shi, I feel that your gaze is slightly vicious...

“If it’s like this, then Fan Tong, you must pick out a weapon. Otherwise, wouldn’t we have come here for nothing?”

Is it necessary to be this persistent? In my opinion, if I wanted to increase my survival rate, wouldn’t buying armor be more useful than buying weapons?

“Fan Tong, do your best.”

Yue Tui smiled at him. Fan Tong always thought that saying “do your best” at this sort of time was quite strange. It didn’t seem appropriate. Yue Tui, you actually didn’t learn the Eastern City’s language very well, did you?

“There are this many weapons here; there will definitely be one suitable for you!”

I don’t even know if we are here to pick out a wife, a pet, or a battle partner

anymore. You couldn't possibly be thinking that we won't be leaving until we pick one out, right? I'm hungry! Please just let me off!

It was already past mealtime, and the number of Fan Tong's failures reached one hundred sixty-eight.

Luo Shi appeared noticeably more impatient. In contrast, Yue Tui had lots of patience and did not express even a bit of restlessness.

Fan Tong was already feeling very tired. Naturally, being rejected by one hundred sixty-eight weapons meant being mocked and ridiculed numerous times. If just choosing a weapon was already this hard, then Fan Tong was afraid that he'd have a bleak future ahead of him if he wanted to follow the path of Wushu.

Among the many weapons, Shufa-related weapons were not considered because Fan Tong had no way of practicing Shufa. If he'd brought back a Shufa staff, then that would simply be a joke. They came here today so it would be more convenient to pick out a weapon used for Wushu, but up 'till now they'd made no progress.

"Fan Tong, why are you so difficult to deal with!"

Luo Shi's attitude right now could be called shame turning into anger. Fan Tong felt that he was very innocent of all wrongdoings on the matter.

He was given the cold shoulder because of his lack of strength — there was no solution for that problem. His mouth angered others until they left — that was the curse's fault. They weren't things he could control, and he'd already tried his best...

"We might as well have you try using this mop!"

Enraged, Luo Shi randomly grabbed a mop that was in the corner and shoved it into Fan Tong's hand. Fan Tong really didn't know whether to laugh or cry at this.

"Hmm? Has someone taken a liking to me?"

The voice that suddenly rang out caused everyone to be silent for a moment.

This mop can speak...

“Th-this mop is also a self-aware weapon?”

Luo Shi’s eyes widened with surprise. He’d thought it was only a simple tool used to sweep the store.

“How rude... I’m a , not a mop...fuwa, I really want to sleep. Put me back if you don’t want to buy me and don’t disturb my sleep.”

This mop, no, this horsetail whisk doesn’t seem to want to promote itself. A horsetail whisk seems to be something like a feather duster, isn’t it? Its position isn’t too different from where a mop would be, right?

At this time, Luo Shi suddenly laughed in a slightly scheming manner. He began speaking before Fan Tong had the chance to think things through properly.

“Fan Tong, do you like this ‘weapon’?”

“I like it.”

Huh? H-hold on...

“So you really do like it. Then, do you want to buy it?”

“Yes.”

W-wait a minute, don’t make me reverse my words! Ah! I should have shaken my head!

“Nn? You want to buy me?”

No way! Hurry up and reject me!

“Fan Tong, tell us your thoughts on that weapon. Ask it if it wants to go with you.”

“I think that holding this kind of weapon would definitely make me look very handsome, and it completely matches my ideals. I knew I would like it very much from the the beginning. I feel that it is very outstanding. Please do not reject me.”

Wrong wrong wrong! Completely wrong! Every sentence is completely wrong!

“Wah, I’m so moved. You’ve made me wake up completely. You’re the first person in a long time who has seen my true value. Have I finally met a kindred spirit? Even though you’re just an ordinary human with a slightly weird name, seeing as you have such sharp eyes, it won’t be a problem if you want me to recognize you as my master...”

This is a big misunderstanding! Stop being pretentious and conceited. I was criticizing you earlier, you know! I don’t want a mop — even if it’s a horsetail whisk, I feel the same way!

“That’s wonderful. Fan Tong, it’s willing!”

Luo Shi seemed to be happy for him; he even smiled while saying those words to Fan Tong.

...! Luo Shi, what’s the meaning of this! You definitely know that my words are being reversed; you definitely know!

“...”

Yue Tui looked at Luo Shi, then looked at Fan Tong, and then looked at the “mop” in Fan Tong’s hand. It was a while before he found his voice. He squeezed out a stiff smile and congratulated Fan Tong.

“Fan Tong, congratulations.”

I know that inside you feel that this situation is very strange. It’s okay; you don’t need to force yourself to speak insincerely. Your expression is too fake — you obviously also feel that a mop isn’t a good weapon. Maybe you even think that there’s something wrong with my head because I feel that a mop is great... the point is that this isn’t worth congratulating either! I was definitely set-up by Luo Shi!

“Then let’s hurry up and get the master recognition ceremony over with. I want to go back to sleep.”

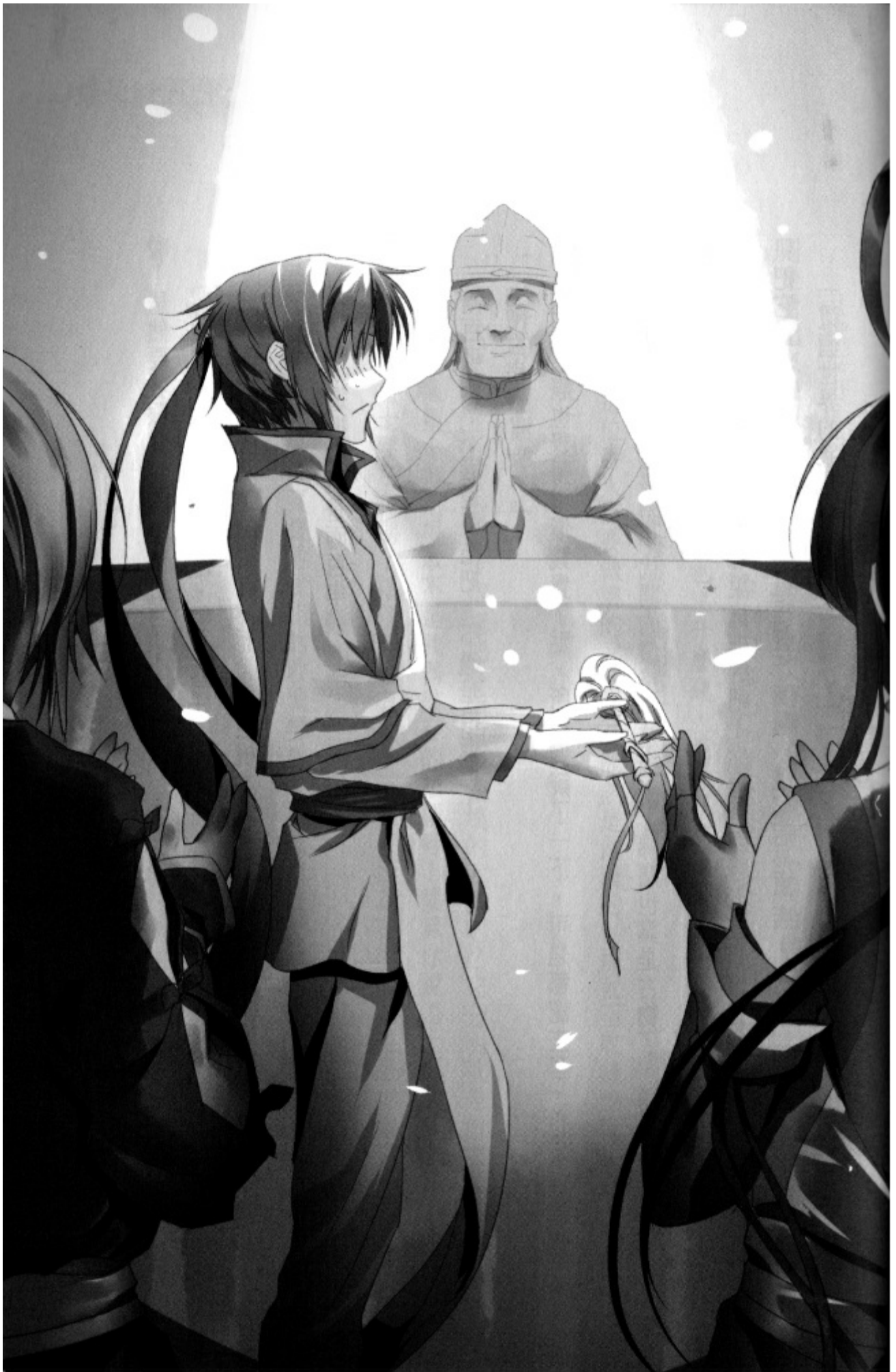
“...”

This mop seems to think it’s some kind of hotshot, but it’s really just a mop! Then again, a mop...how do you use that in combat?

The so-called master recognition ceremony is actually very simple. After

exchanging names in the circle provided by the weapon store, the ceremony was considered done. Fan Tong originally thought that he would have to give a drop of blood or something like that, but it turned out that only a verbal pledge was required. He wasn't too clear on what kind of effect the ceremony would have either.

However, the ceremony was more like a legitimate marriage ceremony. There were even exactly three witnesses, unreservedly saying congratulations, congratulations...completely ignoring the fact that his expression contained no happiness in it at all.



"My name is Fan Tong..."

I really don't know if I should be happy or sad that I'm not saying "My name isn't Fan Tong" at this moment.

"My name is Puhahaha."

What?

What's your name? Can...can you say it again?

Standing nearby, both Luo Shi and Yue Tui had extremely strange expressions. Fan Tong wasn't sure if they were forcibly suppressing the urge to go "puhahaha" or not. What kind of a weird name is that?! Who named you?! What terrible taste! Where exactly do weapons' names come from?!

"The master recognition ceremony is completed. Congratulations, Mr. Fan Tong."

Stop congratulating me. Also, Mr. Fan Tong sounds kind of awkward. Can't you call me Mr. Fan?

"Oh, right. After acquiring me, you can't get any other weapons. Don't say I didn't warn you."

Holy crap! Does this count as embarking on a hopeless adventure? Yue Tui, hurry up and hold out your hand and make this mop die! It even wants me to be tied to it for my entire life!

"Fan Tong, your weapon loves you so much. Its desire to monopolize you is very strong."

Luo Shi, why such a gossipy tone of voice? And also, mops don't count as weapons at all, so stop calling it a weapon and carelessly raising its status, okay?

"All right then, this weapon costs two hundred strings."

—!

Two hundred strings!

Two hundred strings? But it's just a mop! But it's just a mop—

"Two hundred strings?"

Luo Shi probably also felt that it cost a bit too much, so he hesitated a bit. But

since the weapon had already recognized Fan Tong as its master, he couldn't return it.

"Lord Luo Shi, this price was set during the Zhao Era. This mo...horsetail whisk counts as an antique, so two hundred strings is reasonable and fair."

You're lying! You were obviously about to say "mop" earlier! Also, you just found out today that it talks. Before today, you've only used it as an ordinary mop! There's a shady businessman here! This shop is a scam—

"Are the weapons in this world all this inexpensive?"

After Fan Tong asked this, Luo Shi shot a glance at him. The latter seemed to feel that there really was no saving that mouth of his. In contrast, Yue Tui looked like he really wanted to fuss over Fan Tong and check if he had a fever. Only "Puhahaha" agreed with Fan Tong's words.

"Indeed, two hundred strings is letting you off easy. Don't you know that you're taking advantage of me? Even though being sold so cheaply makes me a bit unhappy, you look like you don't have much money, so let's just leave it at that."

...Could someone please drag this mop out and give it a stomping?

"Aside from that, doesn't this customer need a broken weapon? Since it's broken, I don't mind giving it to you for free. I'll bring you to the back to pick one."

"All right, thank you."

Not fair—! The way I see it, this mop is clearly a broken weapon, right? Clearly, it was only made into the shape of a mop because it was made the wrong way! A mop definitely isn't a category weapons should come in! Even if you say that Taoist priests use horsetail whisks, does this country have any Taoist priests? Does it? Are there people in this country who hold this kind of thing and walk around the streets or even on the battlefield? Are there—

Fan Tong highly suspected that the store owner decided how much to charge based on appearances. Then, should he be happy that he only differed from Yue Tui by two hundred strings?

Yue Tui followed the storeowner to the back of the store and brought back a medium-length sword. Actually, broken weapons didn't look too different from ordinary weapons; they just couldn't speak, lacked luster, looked a bit dim, and supposedly were harder to use. Because they did not possess intelligence, they also didn't require a master recognition ceremony. Fan Tong actually felt quite envious looking at Yue Tui.

Broken weapons wouldn't bicker or make trouble for him. More importantly, they were free and actually looked like weapons.

Looking at Yue Tui's posture, Fan Tong thought Yue Tui seemed very accustomed to holding swords. It didn't look awkward at all.

... As for how he could wield a mop naturally, that was a problem worth thinking about. It made him very unhappy to imagine that such a day would come.

"Is it really okay for you to just use a broken weapon..."

Luo Shi was still fretting. Though he was not the one using the weapon, he was still very concerned.

If you're so peeved by Yue Tui using a broken weapon, why are you content with me getting a mop? Do mops suit me?

"I think it's great. It feels quite easy to use."

Yue Tui sheathed the sword. Fan Tong hadn't seen him test the sword, so he didn't know how Yue Tui came to that conclusion.

"I'm going to sleep. Don't bother me."

Puhahaha threw these words at him, then quieted down. Fortunately it didn't snore or Fan Tong really wouldn't know what to think.

"Dear customers, please feel free to use the two weapons as you like. The weapons from these racks are all ordinary self-aware ones, so you don't need to worry about killing New Residents. Truthfully, soul purging weapons can't be sold to New Residents. Only if Lord Luo Shi wanted to buy one himself could this store offer to sell them..."

Aside from on the battlefield, New Residents had no way of obtaining soul purging weapons. In contrast, every Natural Resident was allocated one. This was the advantage Eastern City gave Natural Residents.

Fan Tong had only heard that New Residents murdering Natural Residents was a very serious matter, and almost all of the murderers were executed. If New Residents used soul purging weapons to kill New Residents, however, he didn't know how they would be dealt with.

But something the owner said still caught Fan Tong's attention. How exactly would you attack someone with a mop? The storeowner had said something about attacking as you please, but however you look at it, it seems very difficult to cause any damage. Did he want Fan Tong to turn the mop around and use the handle to jab at people's eyes? Is this clumsy method the only way to use the mop?

Perhaps he should ask the mop how to use it? Having to ask his own weapon for instructions, how can such a pathetic owner exist...

"Mm. There's no need to hold back when using weapons to deal with New Residents. If they make things difficult for you again, teach them a lesson." Luo Shi said. A feeling of powerlessness overcame Fan Tong. What can he use to teach blue tassels a lesson? He wouldn't even be able to skin a chicken with this mop.

"Thank you for cooperating with us today. That'll be all."

"Yes, Lord Luo Shi. Take care."

The store owner politely saw them out. Technically it's dinnertime now, isn't it? Fan Tong looked at Luo Shi somewhat expectantly.

The first thing Luo Shi did after leaving the store was to take out his Fuzhou communication charm. After it connected, he promptly struck up a conversation.

"Yin Shi, where are you now? ...Oh, then I'm bringing some people back with me. If something comes up, I'll ask you."

The conversation was brief but puzzling.

“Let’s go. Come home with me. We’ll eat and take the chance to ask Yin Shi about why weapons reject you.”

Luo Shi spoke casually, but both Fan Tong and Yue Tui were dazed for a few seconds.

Come home... come home?

“You, you said, where are we going....”

“Shen Wang Dian, my home.”

— This is way too sudden! Lord Luo Shi—have mercy on my heart—

© Fan Tong’s Afterward

I wonder how many heroes, warriors or even ordinary little people dream of possessing a godly weapon. Hopefully, I’d strike the world of my prowess when wielding it. Then, when I actually use it, it’d be so strong I’d be everyone’s figure of envy and admiration. Just by obtaining such a weapon, I feel like my luck would also change for the better, and my life would also head toward a rising path of success... but of course that’s impossible at this point.

Whether it’s a mop or a horsetail whisk, it makes no difference. Once I whip out this weapon, if everyone’s not gaping with their mouths wide open, they’d be laughing their ass off. Maybe it’d distract enemies like this, but if I relied on this kind of visual effect to achieve victory, I’d still be disappointed in myself...

That Tractor Teacher from Wushu combat class said we should go to class after we get weapons. Does that mean, he will teach us according to the weapons we chose?

If so, what he’s going to teach me? If he’s actually done research on mop techniques, I will never call him Tractor Teacher again. I’ll call him Terrific Teacher instead.

What’s worse is that, aside from its strange name, this mop won’t allow me to obtain another weapon.

So even if I’m fortunate enough to become famous in the future, my nickname will still be closely related to mops... like, “The Mop Knight”, “Rice Bucket with a

Mop” , “Mop Alien”, etc., stirring up the world with a mop in hand...

Can I throw it away? The most basic way to deal with it is to get rid of it, but it doesn't seem like I can throw it away anytime soon.

Maybe I should try getting along with it, and then asking it if it can transform into something more attractive?

Next: [Chapter 5: Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other's Houses](#)

Previous: [Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, and our Chicken Skins too](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translators: Sherry, Nannyn

Proofreaders: PiKairi, Nuddles, Nannyn, Sherry

a character from a Chinese folktale, a tigress who eats little girls and can take the form of an old lady

Driven Water Spell

Driven Fire Spell

someone who draws charms

first character is the Fu (符) in Fuzhou, yin (印) means print/mark/seal/stamp

His name means rice bucket, which is an insult. Rice bucket is also pronounced “Fan Tong”

The sword is complaining that everyone will call him a knife that belongs to a rice bucket.

The Chinese name is Fu Chen, a “weapon” that Taoist monks use.

← [Chapter 3: Safeguarding our Chicken Feathers, and our Chicken Skins too](#)
[Chapter 5 Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other’s Houses](#) →

Leave a Reply

*Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked **

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ *Notify me of follow-up comments by email.*
- ☐ *Notify me of new posts by email.*

18 Comments so far:

1.  Mira says:

[February 6, 2016 at 11:17 pm](#)

Thanks for the chapter! by the way the image is broken :<

[Reply](#)

○ *Jostena says:*

[May 21, 2016 at 2:46 pm](#)

Yeah it is and I thought it was my internet or something but at least someone else knows that too XC

[Reply](#)



2. *KT says:*

[May 25, 2014 at 6:20 am](#)

Dear god, Yue Tui is the Western emperor! It all makes sense! The weapons are terrified of him because he killed 300,000 people, and judging from the way they kept their emperor in chains, the Western city is equally terrified of him, to the point where they tried to kill him. (I say "tried" because that means he must be a fake New Resident, we already know that can happen.)

That said, the mop was hilarious. Even if it would be cliché, I still hope it turns out to be a super-powerful weapon after all.

[Reply](#)



○ *Jostena says:*

[May 21, 2016 at 2:44 pm](#)

I totally agree with your theory!!!!

[Reply](#)



3. Saviesa says:

[May 23, 2014 at 2:21 am](#)

I call foreshadowing on the last sentence. What do you wanna bet that the mop actually can transform into any weapon? Fan Tong just has to learn how to communicate with it.

[Reply](#)



4. 黒 says:

[May 4, 2014 at 6:06 am](#)

Hahaha! Wow, definitely had a good laugh XD. But I still have my hopes set on Puhahaha turning out to be a useful weapon. Who knows, maybe it can call out Fuzhou techniques for him. XP

[Reply](#)



5. Zen says:

[March 2, 2014 at 5:22 pm](#)

Goodness, he's truly an unlucky guy with equally as unlucky friends....

[Reply](#)



6. snuffie says:

[March 2, 2014 at 3:38 pm](#)

Thanks for the chapter! Please work hard for the next chapters too! Jia you~~ヾ('▽`*)/*

[Reply](#)

7.  Snuffie says:

[January 26, 2014 at 4:52 pm](#)

Wow, Fan Tong finally got himself a weapon. And a mo-horsetail whisk at that. Congratz, Fan Tong!

(Puhahahahahahaha.....)

[Reply](#)

8.  [Michelangel07](#) says:

[January 25, 2014 at 10:30 pm](#)

Never in my wildest dreams did i expect him to end up with a mo-horsetail whisk... I bet it's good in the summer with all the mosquitoes.

[Reply](#)

9.  Amiric says:

[January 9, 2014 at 4:33 pm](#)

Thanks for the chapter. It's awesome as always; though I thought they actually find their destined weapons at last. However, just as Yue Tui doesn't need a weapon to be awesome; I don't think Fan Tong will get any better with a weapon.

[Reply](#)

10.  teckie says:

[December 24, 2013 at 10:42 pm](#)

Pffft... I think this is the chapter that's made me laugh the most so far! And there's still a 20% to go! XD i'm so looking forward to knowing what is

his weapon, yet the poor dying knife and sword have made my day!

Thank you, and Merry Xmas, Giraffe Corps!! :D

(On a side note, since i am not a native english speaker, sometimes my mind mistakes the meaning of some words for the meaning of another that is written simmilarly... So for a long time, i believed you guys were called 'Giraffe Corpses' and i was like, 'wow, such a creepy translation group'... XD sorry about that guys!)

[Reply](#)



11. Amiric says:

[December 24, 2013 at 4:31 pm](#)

This chapter is awesome! Never thought Yue Tui can 'kill' a weapon just by holding them. And all the drama between the weapons.....Will they really find their destined weapons? Only 20% left to go!

[Reply](#)



12. Sandal Hat says:

[December 1, 2013 at 8:53 pm](#)

I'm almost certain Fan Tong's weapon will be one that gets along with the opposite of his feelings due to his curse. Poor Fan Tong, still looking forward to whatever weapon you will get.

[Reply](#)



13. snuffie says:

[November 25, 2013 at 7:44 am](#)

chapter gets posted, chapter starts, chapter picks up pace, chapter gets even funnier, chapter's reaching the most interesting poiiiiiint... chapter

ends. flips metaphorical table

Now I really understand Yu Wo's introduction completely.. Fan Tong being useless even at Fuzhou is really depressing, the world is really unjust, adding injustice to insult to injury.. so depressing! ... yet I'm still laughing BWAHAHAHAHAHAH

I applaud the author for the brilliant delivery that makes every misfortune to the protagonist a delicious treat to the readers. This novel is really shaping me up to be a horrible person.... but I love it!

[Reply](#)

○ *a giraffe says:*

[November 26, 2013 at 3:12 am](#)

LOL :D Not quite. There's still 60% of the chapter still to go!

And you're not the only one helpless laughing at his misery. It's really hard NOT to laugh at poor Fan Tong! Sadly (for Fan Tong anyways), his misery equals our amusement. ^^;

-PiKairi

[Reply](#)



■ *snuffie says:*

[November 26, 2013 at 2:12 pm](#)

*ah I see! I thought the 60% was proofreading :P
moreover.. he wouldn't be able to communicate properly with his weapon anyway because of the curse, guess another broken future is in store later in the chapter.. or maybe they'll get along fine because the weapon is a bit off its rocker... hence the "match made in heaven" comment.. heh heh. It'll be hilariously awesome if he really end up being proficient at martial arts, though. (don't tell me anything!)*

Really thank you guys for the translations, I'm also looking forward to Gong Hua's next chapter hint, hint, nudge, nudge

[Reply](#)



■

PiKairi says:

[December 7, 2013 at 6:27 pm](#)

LOL :D I didn't even think of that! I assumed that he and the weapon would be conversing with their thoughts, not aloud. In that case, Fan Tong doesn't need to worry about the curse but I was guessing that all the good weapons would avoid him because of his bad luck. XD I can totally imagine a weapon just pitying him and yet being somewhat crazy itself.

You might have to wait just a bit while longer for Gong Hua. It hasn't been picked up by any of the translators just quite yet. Good things happen to those who wait though. ;) Who knows. Maybe another novel will be updated meanwhile.

[Reply](#)

Chapter 5: Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other's Houses

On April 30, 2014, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [24 Comments](#)

“Befriending the prince means hanging out at the palace. Befriending an alien means hanging out on another planet.” —Fan Tong

“Where’s Fan Tong’s home? The kitchen?” —Luo Shi

Saying that I don’t want to go to Shen Wang Dian, that’d be a lie. It’s the holiest and most revered place in all of Eastern City, so naturally Fan Tong had listed it as must-see “sightseeing spot” for if he ever got the chance... But to be dragged there with no psychological preparation, Fan Tong felt conflicted about how far the situation differed from his own imagination.

The idea he had in mind involved his power and rank having risen so high, the court would call upon him, after which he’d step across the palace in pride.... Either that, or Shen Wang Dian might so happen to have an open-house one day, and he would follow the crowd to tour the palace... He never thought that he would visit as a commoner, but in the middle of the night!

Although Yue Tui was there to accompany him, with Luo Shi as the leader, basically visiting as friends of the prince, he still felt awkward all around. His head tingled the closer they got to the palace.

On the way there, Luo Shi vaguely explained to them the features of soul purging weapons, as well as things they should pay attention to.

“To New Residents, soul purging weapons are the deadliest of things. Don’t think that it’s fine just because you got a scratch and won’t die. As long as you’ve been injured by a soul purging weapon, it’s incredibly difficult to recover.”

“So it wouldn’t heal even if I commit suicide?”

Fan Tong couldn't resist but ask out of curiosity.

"At the same time a soul purging weapon injures your body, it damages your soul as well. The power of Chen Yue cannot repair souls. Even if you commit suicide and revive, the only thing that would be repaired is your body. That's why, if you see soul purging weapons being used, you must be sure to avoid them."

So basically, scram like I've seen my worst enemy. There's still another problem with this, though.

"A soul that's been injured can never be repaired? Also, how can I tell which weapons are soul purging?"

The curse actually left him alone for two sentences straight. It's a miracle. It's been said that things that reach the extreme will always be met with a counter-reaction. Does that mean he'd be extra unlucky afterward?

No, he's already been plenty unlucky today. Fan Tong glanced at the mop hanging at his waist, his emotions a bit melancholy.

"...Fan Tong. The fact that you're suddenly speaking normally makes me really uncomfortable. Or could it be that what you said is wrong, and I just can't translate it?"

Luo Shi looked at him with an uncomprehending gaze.

I finally say something correctly, and you're still displeased! How can you be so picky!

"Wrong? Translate?"

Yue Tui couldn't understand what Luo Shi was saying, as he still hadn't figured out the exact problem with Fan Tong's language barrier.

"Nothing."

He's already asking you, and yet you can't help me out here and explain it to him...

"Once a soul's been injured, it cannot be repaired. As far as what we know now, there are no incidences of souls repairing automatically. People with damaged souls would start acting strangely. Depending on the person, the flaws

change... Fan Tong, could it be that your soul's been injured before?"

Luo Shi spoke, until out of the blue, he glanced over doubtfully at Fan Tong.

"Yes! I didn't explain it to you a long time ago!"

I actually meant "No. I explained it to you a long time ago!"

Actually, on the same topic, could it be that Lord Yin Shi speaks so weirdly because his soul's been hurt before too?

"Fan Tong, is it because your soul's been injured that you speak so strangely? Who hurt you?"

Yue Tui asked him in a surprised and questioning tone. *Great, the misunderstanding expands further.*

"No, he hasn't been here for that long. What chance would he have to be hurt by a soul purging weapon? If he was here for more than five years, then there's a chance he was hurt by Luo Yue's Emperor..."

Although I had mentioned before that I wanted a more heroic death, ideally killed by some kind of famous figure, by some fancy technique, if I had the chance, I'd still prefer to live, alright? I don't want that chance at all.

"Eh? Ah?"

Yue Tui didn't respond immediately, so Luo Shi patched up what he said.

"But, if he was wounded by Luo Yue's emperor, it wouldn't just be an injury. There's no way he'd still be alive."

Oh... the battle from five years ago. I heard about that from Mi Zhong before. The guy that killed off three-hundred thousand people. Seeing from Luo Shi's peeved expression, he must really hate that person, I bet? This must be a national-level grudge.

"Yue Tui, you've never heard of Luo Yue's Emperor?"

Luo Shi guessed from Yue Tui's blank face.

"No, I know... Hm, I think I do anyways."

Yue Tui answered with hesitation. Fan Tong could understand that. He might have forgotten it already. That one time he mentioned in the dorms, he said

three million at one point, then thirty thousand at another; it'd be difficult for anyone to not mix the facts up. Zhu Sha even asked him where the other two million ninety-seven hundred thousand people went...

"I feel like the campus should start another class. Everyone should know more about what's happening over in Luo Yue. Even if they're New Residents, they should realize who our enemies are. Especially that bastard Englar and his despicable minions! I don't want to see our people unknowingly greeting Luo Yue's residents with a smile."

Luo Shi exposed emotions of agitation while speaking. His eyes also carried a wave of hate.

Hm, okay, I got it. The first time I saw you, you were heartlessly blasting the Luo Yue people into pieces. I saw it all. So you're someone with a very deep grudge against the Western City, but not biased against Western-looking residents from the Eastern City. Born they are Eastern City's people, dead they are Eastern City's ghosts. Is that right?

"Uh..."

Yue Tui seemed for a moment at a loss for words. Perhaps because he was supposed to be in Western City, that he now feels awkward?

"...Was my expression really terrifying? This is what happens every time I think of those people. Did I scare you guys?"

Luo Shi realized he showed a more extreme side of himself and hurriedly fixed up his expression.

No, pretty boy. Even if you're angry, you still look nice. Plus, you weren't at a point of being terrifying. I think Yue Tui's silent pressure is worse...

"N... No. Didn't Fan Tong ask about how to recognize soul purging weapons? Please continue."

Yue Tui, you're naturally the scariest one of us here. Why are you the one putting up a frightened expression...

"One of the ways to recognize a soul purging weapon is quite simple. You just

need to see if there's a glow surrounding the weapon."

Oh... a glow?

"In order to turn a normal weapon into a soul purging one, the most important thing is to seal the 'soul purging force' into it. Logically, as long as someone can make the force come into contact with a soul, they can destroy that soul even without a weapon. There's almost no one that can do this though. The point of soul purging weapons is to allow commoners to possess the force that is sealed within the weapons, and use it to touch enemies' souls. The soul purging force itself does not glow, but because it remains in an active state when sealed in the weapons, the weapon will always have a radiating nimbus around it. This is the basic way of differentiating soul purging weapons."

Not bad, Luo Shi. Now you can replace Mi Zhong.

But following this line of reasoning... didn't that mean Natural Residents would be affected too? New Residents can regenerate, so it becomes obvious what has happened when they don't float up from the pond anymore, but isn't it the same for Natural Residents then? Wouldn't their souls be shattered too?

"When swordsmiths make weapons, they must decide whether they want them to be intelligent or soul purging, since most metals can't withstand both powers combined. Even if the metal itself allows it, not many swordsmiths have the level of ability required to craft such weapons. That's why most soul purging weapons don't have a conscience and wouldn't speak; only intelligent weapons are given life. Though, thanks to the destructive power of the soul purging force, the weapons are in no way inferior to intelligent ones."

Shouldn't they just make every weapon into soul purging ones then? Oh, so the strong weapons are used as quality control, is that what it is?

"The benefit of intelligent weapons is that there's no time limit to their use. The soul purging force weakens with time and eventually disappears, leaving the weapon useless, just like the broken ones we saw at the store earlier. You'd have to switch one out every so often, and they're incredibly expensive too... Natural Residents are protected by law, so they're all offered a soul purging weapon for free, and they can get a new one every time it breaks. Without the government's help, more than half the people wouldn't even be able to afford these weapons."

How expensive? Just how expensive are they? Are they as expensive as two hundred strings?

“The Eastern City sure treats their Natural Residents very well.”

When Yue Tui voiced his feelings, a slight frown formed on Luo Shi’s face.

“You don’t say? It’s all due to Wei Shi’s suggestion. Just like how New Residents’ salaries can only be half of what Natural Residents make; that’s all his doing.”

Wh.....whaaaaattt——!

New Residents are definitely made out to be some kind of second-rate citizens! Lord Wei Shi is definitely the enemy of New Residents. Bullying his own people so blatantly, he’s worse than those guys from Luo Yue!

“Fan Tong, it seems that whenever the matter deals with money, you always have a bigger reaction .”

It seemed that his expression was so outraged that the other two couldn’t ignore it. Both Yue Tui and Luo Shi turned to look at him.

“It’s not like you guys don’t know I have no debt and am living a comfortable life...”

This sentence was rather easy to translate, so Luo Shi understood and nodded his head. YueTui seemed to still wonder whether Fan Tong’s soul had been injured, and wavered about whether to pity him or not.

“You should just work hard and slowly repay your debt. There’s a bigger sense of accomplishment when you do such things yourself. It’d also teach you the value of money.”

I’m already in debt by three hundred ninety-five strings. I don’t think working hard will be enough. I think I’d need to risk my life to make up for it.

At this time of the night, the vendors passing out public rations had just finished packing up; it seemed they had stayed later than usual already. Only a few areas in The Eastern City remained lively throughout the night, and they became even more obvious as the sky got darker. Naturally, Shen Wang Dian was not one of these areas, and so the trio moved from the bustling part of town to a

quieter, more deserted area. Pedestrians on the streets gradually lessened, until only the three of them were left.

When they were walking in the livelier area with Luo Shi, multiple people shot glances their way. Although Fan Tong felt much less awkward now, he still felt confused inside.

What are you looking at? Can't Luo Shi bring his subordinates around? Is it so hard to see us as his underlings? How weird.

Alright, fine, our attitude when talking with each other wasn't very convincing, but... can you all not stare so hard? Honestly.

Pedestrians were no longer around once they got near Shen Wang Dian, but the uncomfortable feeling of tension worsened. They faced the regular civilians earlier, but now it's the imperial palace they're up against.

"Luo Shi, are we... really not going in?"

"Why would we not go in? Oh, you mean, if we really are going in. Of course we are. Didn't we say that we'll eat dinner and have a chat? Yin Shi said to eat at his place, so we can just walk in directly."

"But, but, but, but... what if we bump into the Young Emperor?"

"Why would we see the Young Emperor at Shen Wang Dian? Ah, you meant the Queen? That mouth of yours is terrible!"

Ahh, so much for my constant worry that I'd mistakenly call the Queen as the Emperor; it's come true...

"My mother mostly just stays inside her own palace and doesn't walk around much. Don't feel pressured. Even if you meet, just give her a simple salute. She won't be interested in you."

That was what Luo Shi told him, but Fan Tong still doubted the credibility of that statement.

Are you sure... Her only son finally brought home his friends for a visit, New Residents to boot, would she as the mother really not be interested... Unless she doesn't care about her own son?

"I just feel so nervous going outside. Yue Tui, you also feel nervous, right?"

Fan Tong was still experiencing stage fright, so he dragged someone else down with him. As for saying outside instead of inside, that's the least of his worries.

"A bit yes..."

Yue Tui forced a smile. Fan Tong had just been rambling. Who would have thought that he'd actually hit the mark?

"What's there to be nervous about? You two have already seen Yin Shi. Shen Wang Dian is a bit big, and there are guards around, but for the most part, it's no different from any other place. You just have to get used to it."

It's because it's your house. That's why you can say it so easily!

It'd make no sense to turn around now that they had come all the way to the entrance. Plus he was honestly hungry. What would food in the palace taste like? Fan Tong was excited and anxious as he continued following Luo Shi.

There were paved steps in front of Shen Wang Dian, and upon reaching the top, Fan Tong saw the ice blue architectural work of art up close. From afar, the building appeared translucent and fantastic due to the reflective material it used. Now that it was right in front of him, the place looked even more dreamlike. The entirety of Shen Wang Dian appeared ethereal, as though enshrouded by mist and fog, carrying with it an inexpressible sense of mystery, almost causing the viewer to worship it by impulse.

"Lord Luo Shi."

As they neared the front doors, the guards on duty immediately bowed in an orderly fashion. Luo Shi was already accustomed to this kind of treatment and simply waved his hand to acknowledge them before walking straight past.

The guards were indeed professionals and completely ignored the two passers-by following behind Luo Shi. They didn't even look at them and, of course, did not greet them with a bow. The guards wore all blue tassels or higher, Fan Tong noticed, and were all New Residents as well. What kind of jobs did Natural Residents do? Even if they get twice the pay, there's still no salary without a job.

Although the weapon store owner from earlier was a Natural Resident, which confirmed the fact that they're employed, Fan Tong still had not seen many Natural Residents around at all. On the same topic, if hiring New Residents

required only half-pay, does that mean it's harder to find a job as Natural Residents?

Maybe it was because of his nervousness that Fan Tong began thinking about completely unrelated matters to escape from reality. In comparison, Yue Tui leisurely checked out the place, glancing left and right. How admirable.

They streamed past the first palace in Shen Wang Dian, reaching a series of winding corridors that led to all the different parts of the building. Only Luo Shi knew the way here and as long as they trailed his steps, they shouldn't get lost.

"Let's head straight to Yin Shi's place. We can go to mine next time."

Next time? Eh? So you really see this as a simple chat and dinner with friends who can come by anytime?

To Luo Shi, this was nothing more than 'his home', so he probably could not understand why others felt awkward and couldn't adjust to the situation. But Fan Tong had already gotten used to Luo Shi's rather unyielding personality.

Luo Shi walked them through one of the corridors and over a structure similar to the archways from picturesque ponds somewhere midway. It seemed that they would need a guide when leaving later as well. Fan Tong honestly could not memorize his way.

After circling out of the mazy corridors and into a more spacious area, Luo Shi briefly clarified their location.

"This is the second palace. Going in this direction leads to where I live."

The lighting in the first and second palaces was dim, probably because they used natural lighting in daytime and didn't need to light up that many areas at night.

Speaking of which, how many palaces are there?

As they passed a body of water and entered the third palace, the group bumped into someone. Luo Shi stopped in his steps, and turned from his relaxed disposition to a much more serious one.

"Luo Shi, what are you doing bringing New Residents in here?"

The other person started the conversation with an antagonistic tone. His

attitude was of interrogation and scorn.

“New Residents have no right to enter this place, unless it is for public affairs.”

Hearing this, Fan Tong could guess who he was.

The Five Attendants of Eastern City. Other than the missing Hui Shi, there was only one they had not met – the one who was incredibly discriminative of New Residents – Wei Shi. Considering the way he spoke to them now, his image was pretty accurate.

Because Fan Tong had never seen Wei Shi before, he couldn't help but look at him longer than usual. Even though the lights were dim, he could still make out the gray in Wei Shi's hair and his reticent and reserved appearance. It was not a look that others would want to get close to.

Wei Shi looked about thirty years old, naturally not bad-looking either, but he simply couldn't be compared with Yin Shi. Yin Shi's smile could set the entire crowd into a frenzy, but if Wei Shi smiled... Fan Tong could only imagine an evil smirk.

“They are my friends.”

Luo Shi's expression sank, clearly displeased by Wei Shi's words. However, Wei Shi did not care to stop talking despite seeing Luo Shi's displeasure.

“Making friends with New Residents? Luo Shi, know your place. Your actions must match your standing in society and not embarrass Lord Xi Ying. I thought you had at least that much awareness.”

Other than the quick glance Wei Shi gave them when he first arrived, he completely disregarded any thought of looking at them again, as if giving New Residents an extra look would be one too many. He had no intention of hiding his absolute bigotry. If he dealt with all New Residents with such blatant hatred, it was no wonder that everyone despised him so much.

Fan Tong casually took a peek at Wei Shi's tassel. It was dark purple, meaning he's one of the uncommonly found masters... In conclusion, he still could not understand why Yin Shi's tassel was pitch black.

“I don't need you to tell me how to choose friends. You're not my father! Don't

tell me what to do. What right do you have to interfere in my private matters?"

Luo Shi completely deplored how Wei Shi had appointed himself as a disciplinarian, so he also rebuked him intensely.

"This is a reminder made with good intentions. You're still young, and your power is not strong enough. It's not possible for you to take care of all of your responsibilities as an 'Attendant'. If I feel like I see a problem, it's natural that I point out your wrongdoing. Or are you so spoiled that you cannot respect an elder's guidance?"

"You...!"

Being belittled like that, Luo Shi was so angry that he was at a loss for words. If he spoke back, it would really seem like he's spoiled and ill-mannered, which would also give Wei Shi an excuse to criticize his upbringing. Luo Shi felt it was unjustified to have Wei Shi dominate the argument, but he honestly couldn't think of a suitable comeback and had to grit his teeth in tolerance.

Luo Shi, why are you playing nice? You should just slap him in the face twice and then kick him in the shin... Cough. Anyways, just use violence to shut him up! But it seems you're weaker than him... Then, go cry to your mom! He should at least be wary of the Queen right?

But I heard the Queen also values his opinions the most... What a pain. What should we do?

Of course, there was no place for the two commoners, Fan Tong and Yue Tui, in the conversation between two Attendants. If they interrupted, it might worsen Luo Shi's position, so they decided to remain silent.

"Eh? It seems there are a lot of people here... Ah, damn Wei Shi, are you bullying Xiao Luo Shi again!"

An eerily familiar voice sounded from the other direction, or more accurately, extremely identifiable.

Wei Shi's face twitched the moment he heard that voice, and put on an expression of even worse hatred than the one from when he saw New Residents. This must be because they had too much history together and the grudge had been dug so deep and far that even the sound of his voice could irritate Wei Shi

so much.

“Yin Shi. It’s you again!”

“Ah, you stole my line. Why is it that I always bump into you when I’m out to find someone? Can’t you stay away from the third palace?”

Yin Shi said as he walked over, apparently annoyed by Wei Shi. He keeps showing up at the most critical moments. Was it some kind of talent?

Yin Shi quickly came over from the far end of the third palace, and stood between Wei Shi and Luo Shi. He had a protective look on his face.

“Damn Wei Shi, how can you be so low? You’re bullying little Luo Shi; how shameful!”

Hearing Yin Shi speak in such an accusing voice angered Wei Shi, but he still would rather look sensible than childish. With a bit of effort, he managed to speak in a calm voice.

“What do you see? Why do you simply jump to the conclusion that I’m bullying him? I’m just teaching him something important!”

He forgot that, when speaking with Yin Shi, rational communication is impossible.

“You can tell just by looking at his expression that Xiao Luo Shi is angry with you. You only say things that are difficult to listen to, you are tasteless, your personality is twisted, and you even bully children!”

Yin Shi, I think you are also saying things that aren’t very nice. You can tell from his expression. Look, Wei Shi is furious because you’re bullying him...

“I’m warning you; do not use disorganized words to insult me casually!”

Since Wei Shi was glaring angrily at Yin Shi, it seemed smart to keep one’s mouth shut.

“, what do you mean by that? I won’t even be cooking, don’t change the subject!”

In the end, who is changing the subject?

"I don't understand what you're saying. Your words seem like the result of a misunderstanding."

Wei Shi then turned his back and walked away. To his back, Yin Shi mumbled: "Yeah, you talk like that but then you run away, villain."

I think he simply figured out that communicating with you is impossible.

With Wei Shi gone, Yin Shi turned to Luo Shi and asked eagerly, "Xiao Luo Shi, what did he say to you?"

"He just said some unpleasant words." Luo Shi wasn't in a very good mood, and he had a terrible look on his face. In fact, he's probably thinking that, since he can't do anything right, how could he be the queen's son, right?

"Ah, it's so annoying. I really wanted to block the route from the fourth palace to the third palace so that 'BAM!' there will be something blocking his way.

Yin Shi, you just said a very problematic statement. Basically, if you really do that, other people will also be blocked, right?

"Ling Shi lives in the fifth palace, and Mother lives in the sixth palace, have you forgotten?" Luo Shi asked with a dark expression. *In other words, Yin Shi, if you do that, those two people will team up and make you eat your words.*

"Nn? Then move them in front of the barrier and just make Wei Shi live behind it."

"..."

Do you really have the final say in it?

"Yin Shi, let's go now. Standing here talking is not very convenient."

"All right, let's go."

"... You're going the wrong way." Luo Shi said coldly.

This is good gossip. Isn't this where he lives? Even after living here for so long, he still doesn't know his way around. If he got lost and couldn't find his way home, wouldn't it be a problem?

"Nn? Ah, I'm not used to walking back."

Yin Shi, your error was nothing conscious, but if you don't usually walk back,

your memory can't be relied on. So how is it that you usually travel? Do you use Shufa?

Following the path, the third palace belonged to Yin Shi. It was nighttime, so the exterior appearance was hidden in the dark, but the inside was brightly lit by lamps. The room was simple, elegant, and had a soft glow that gave it a warm, comfortable atmosphere that would automatically relax its visitors.

Because Yin Shi mentioned that food was already prepared, they passed straight through the living room to the dining area, so that they could eat before the food went cold. Plus, everyone was already hungry.

Seeing the three tables in the dining room overcrowded by food, Luo Shi's headache began to return.

"You... what are you going to do with so much food?"

"Huh? I thought that, since there are quite a few people coming, the more the merrier. Is it too much?"

"It's far too much! How many people did you think were coming! And how did you get so much food ready in such a short time?"

"Ah, I told them to have everything set up in a . I'm not sure how they did it either. I was afraid you guys would be here soon."

"..."

You'd always feel a bit helpless speaking to Yin Shi, but this became an obvious point soon after meeting him.

"Is it really too much?"

Yin Shi looked at the abundance of plates and asked doubtfully again. He really lacks common sense, Fan Tong felt. Couldn't he measure just by how much he usually eats?

Wait, maybe his math skills suck, or perhaps he simply said something wrong. He had people bring in more communication charms than we needed the last time as well...

"Of course it is! We won't finish it all!"

“Then, should I get Xiao Rou to join us?”

Aren't you a bit too casual about this?

“We still have something to ask you. You might as well ask Ling Shi to eat with us instead.”

Inviting a girl to eat at his house this late at night. Something feels unusual about that no matter how you think about it. He honestly doesn't have any self-awareness, this guy.

“Ling Shi? But... Fine, fine. It'd be livelier with him here.”

Yin Shi continued speaking as he dialed on his communication charm.

“Ling Shi, it's me. Come over and eat dinner... How could you call me crazy? Xiao Luo Shi suggested it. You autistic old fart, I'm here inviting you over for some fun out of the kindness of my heart, and you're reacting so coldly? Oh, so you're coming now that Xiao Luo Shi is here? You're so mean. I'm going to remember this.”

It sounds like Ling Shi is coming. I wonder how long it takes to get here from the fifth palace. But Ling Shi is a rather reliable person, so there shouldn't be a problem with getting lost.

“Ah, you all start eating first. No need to wait for him... Did we meet this morning?”

Yin Shi greeted the group while staring at Fan Tong and Yue Tui. He tilted his head and asked.

That is very correct. We have just seen each other this morning. So you still don't remember our faces?

“Ah! Now that I look closer, you look like Hui Shi!”

You're honestly quite slow, Lord Yin Shi.

“You just realized...”

Luo Shi didn't know what to say to him. If he had realized that Yue Tui looked like Hui Shi just now, does that mean he never actually looked at the other person's face before this?

“Hui Shi used to live in the fifth palace back in the day as well. Wei Shi was always so jealous of him... Well, I won’t go deep into that. The food is going to get cold. Let’s eat. Let’s eat.”

Oh? The fifth palace? The one closest to the Queen’s? That doesn’t sound too bad at all. Looks like the Queen really liked him?

How Lord Yin Shi had gotten “exiled” to the third palace seems easy enough to imagine. He was probably too loud or too much of an idiot or something. Though... Luo Shi lives in the second palace. What’s the reason behind that?

Fan Tong thought this as he started picking up the utensils, along with Yue Tui, to eat. After one bite, lights shined from his eyes.

Oh oh oh oh!

This is indeed food from the palace! Lord Yin Shi, if there’s too much to finish, can I get the leftovers?

No matter how hungry someone is, eating all three tables of food that Yin Shi had somehow mustered out would still be impossible. When Fan Tong, Yue Tui and Luo Shi had become half full, Ling Shi also arrived. He dressed more casually at night, wearing robes that were probably more for indoor use.

Can I now flaunt to Mi Zhong that I’ve seen Lord Ling Shi in his casual clothes? That sounds kind of childish though...

“Ling Shi, what took you so long?”

That was the first thing Yin Shi said when he saw Ling Shi come in. Speaking of which, Yin Shi had only been watching them eat until now. Either that or he’d be playing with something on his own. Even if he had eaten dinner already, he shouldn’t act this way, should he? It was his idea to have such a large amount of food, and yet he doesn’t even help eat any of it...

On the other hand, pointing to various dishes that he liked and asking what they’re called and such, Yue Tui appeared to find the food very refreshing despite having eaten quite a bit of it already. Fan Tong responded sometimes, but it was mainly Luo Shi who did the answering. After all, he was more

accustomed to the food here.

As for Yin Shi, it'd be great if he could even answer how much food there was on the table. There's no hope in even asking him anything else.

However, when Luo Shi revealed that a certain dish or another was made with snake meat or some weird thing unknown to Yue Tui and Fan Tong, the two couldn't help but be stunned. Yue Tui gave up asking in the end. Sometimes, an abundance of curiosity is not a good thing.

"I saw Wei Shi on my way here and had a disagreement with him."

Ling Shi flipped his hair with a displeased expression, making it apparent that Wei Shi put him in a bad mood.

Ah... so when Lord Wei Shi headed back to the fourth palace, he bumped into Lord Ling Shi, who was coming out from the fifth. Just who is less lucky here...

"Oh, you met Wei Shi too? Did you fight him?"

There seemed to be something wrong with what Yin Shi thought was most important.

"I'm a cultured person, so I'd only fight unsparingly with our enemies, since their only worth is to be eradicated. The fewer enemies there are, the better."

Ling Shi seemed to possess the same offensive stance as Luo Shi, while Yin Shi was more of a peacemaker. He couldn't agree with Ling Shi's thoughts.

"Ah, but those Western City residents who had done nothing to you are innocent, aren't they? Why are you antagonizing them so much? Don't you think you have more reason to hate Wei Shi?"

It's only once in a blue moon moment that I find Lord Yin Shi's words logical. As opposed to the Luo Yue residents that I've never seen before, Lord Wei Shi is certainly more hateable.

Plus, Lord Ling Shi, haven't you heard that useless comrades are worse than enemies?

"Just the fact that they have anything to do with the Western City is enough reason for me to hold them in hostility. There's no need for another reason."

“Ah, you old fart. Then what about Xiao Rou? What about me? Why don’t you make your move on me first, then.”

Wait, what does this have to do with Bi Rou? Isn’t she a New Resident with a Westerner’s face?

“Ling Shi, come and eat something? There’s a lot.”

Interrupting them in the middle of their conversation, Luo Shi stared at the food which had barely decreased and frowned.

To be honest, one extra mouth wouldn’t be that big of a help. It might be more practical to take some out for the guards... But then I wouldn’t be able to take home the leftovers. Please let me take the leftovers.

“No, I’m not eating. I’m just here to look around. Yue Tui and Fan Tong came too?”

Ling Shi remembered their faces and names, a sky’s difference from Yin Shi.

“Hello, Lord Ling Shi.”

Yue Tui greeted politely. Fan Tong also lowered his head, not wanting to open his mouth.

“Oh, right, right. Ling Shi, he looks a bit like Hui Shi!”

Yin Shi spoke excitedly to Ling Shi, reporting his “new” discovery. Naturally, he just received an eye roll from Ling Shi.

“We saw him last time already. You just noticed?”

A stupid person with an equally idiotic brain. Quite fitting.

“Ah! You’d already noticed last time! Why didn’t you tell me?”

“I thought that anyone with eyes could see it and that there was no need to specifically point it out.”

“What eyes or no eyes... Agh, I’m so mad. You’re sneakily making fun of me again!”

“How rare that you’d notice I’m making fun of you...”

Ling Shi’s words came out as a sort of sigh. The tone was quite terrible to listen

to.

Having been the topic of conversation, Yue Tui suddenly lost his appetite and decidedly claimed he was full. Luo Shi followed his lead, so Fan Tong could only hurry up and shove the food in his hands down his throat, then finish up for dinner. Else, he'd seem like a hungry pig.

"You're all full already? Then what are we going to do with the leftovers?"

Yin Shi asked thoughtlessly. Ling Shi answered matter-of-factly.

"Throw them away. Why did you get so much? If you'd had me cook, I would have at least known to control the amount of food."

Wow! Lord Ling Shi! You can cook!

N-No, wait. Don't throw the food away, you food-wasting, rich people!

"I-I can't take the leftovers?"

Fan Tong mustered up his courage and said it. Everyone looked at him.

Why does it feel so embarrassing, dammit.

"But it'd be cold by the time you bring it back."

Yin Shi's expression showed his confusion on why anyone would want to take the leftovers. Even though his face was handsome, hearing such ignorance made Fan Tong want to punch him.

"The dorms don't have any equipment to keep the food fresh, right? And none of you should have learned the proper shufa or Fuzhou for this yet."

The problem Ling Shi pointed out was more practical than the one Yin Shi mentioned, but the food should at least last a day after bringing it back, right? If they were lucky, it'd even be safe to eat on the second day. Throwing it away now would simply be too much of a waste. They just didn't understand the problem that poor people face.

"Fan Tong, are you really such a rice bucket?"

Luo Shi wrinkled his brows as he spoke. His words hurt Fan Tong a bit.

Human needs rank from food and clothing at the top to entertainment all the way at the bottom. Food is a primary need, you know!

“Agh...”

Yue Tui saw Fan Tong’s expression, and after a moment of thought, gave a small smile.

“I’d like to have some leftovers as well. We may still be able to eat it after we get back. Is that alright?”

“But, it’ll be cold...”

Yin Shi was still blabbering.

“I’ll put a preservation spell on it.”

Ling Shi readily offered help.

“...If you want to take the leftovers, then sure.”

Luo Shi looked away and stopped refusing to let them take it.

Even though Yue Tui had only helped his great desire for the food, Fan Tong still felt like crying when he saw the differential treatment.

Biased... So biased...

“Then I’ll get someone to clean and pack things up. Let’s head to another room to play.”

“...We’re not here to play. We’re here to ask you questions...”

“It’s quite late already. Would Zhu Sha worry if we don’t go back soon? It’s alright if we wait to ask...”

Yue Tui looked at the time. Thinking it might not be appropriate to stay longer, he suggested they head back.

“Since you’re here already, of course you need to ask! That was the point in coming, not to just have a meal!”

“Mm...”

Either way, although the person concerned wasn’t interested in getting answers, they still went to another room to talk. Ling Shi went with them.

“What was it you wanted to ask me?”

After they’d sat down in the other room, Yin Shi got straight to the point and

asked them why they had come over. It was rare for people to ask him for advice, so this was quite a novel experience for him. Normally, everyone would tell him to avoid speaking. The people who actually wanted to listen to him talk were few in number.

“Did you buy a broken weapon once, from a store in the northern part of town?”

Ling Shi frowned slightly when he heard Luo Shi’s question. On the other hand, Yin Shi was surprised.

“Xiao Luo Shi, why do you want to know about my business so badly?”

“Who in the world would care about your business? I just heard about it by chance!” Luo Shi replied in a disgusted voice. At that moment, Ling Shi cut in and asked a question.

“Yin, what did you buy a weapon for?”

Both Ling Shi’s expression and tone of voice were ones of scorn, as if saying, “how troublesome can you be?”

“Ah, because I thought it was amusing... Oh right, I just remembered to tell you, I also bought new armor. I’ll wear it next time for you to see. I think it looks pretty good on me. I wonder what Xiao Rou would think?”

“...You truly are an idiot.”

“Huh? Why?”

You’re earnestly asking why other people think you are an idiot? But doesn’t that just make you even more idiotic? Do you even have a brain, Lord Yin Shi?

“We heard from the shop owner; he said that every weapon you picked up screamed like its life was in danger. So in the end, you bought a broken weapon and left.”

“Xiao Luo Shi, you’re acting as if you’re interrogating a criminal. I’m telling you right now, no matter how much you like it, I won’t give you that knife.”

“ ... ”

Ling Shi glanced coldly at Yin Shi.

“Yin, why would you destroy weapons in your free time?”

“Ah? I didn’t know it would end up like that. I only wanted a partner to chat with, but sadly I didn’t manage to fulfill that wish. Then I thought it would be quite nice to carry a weapon around, so I bought a broken knife. Hahaha.”

Exactly what does this person think weapons are?

“So do you know why that sort of situation would occur when you pick up a self-aware weapon?”

“I guess it’s probably because—Ah! Ouch! Old man, why did you hit me?”

Yin Shi protested while rubbing the spot on his head where Ling Shi had smacked him hard, appearing quite wronged.

“You should at least be aware of the things you can and can’t say. Don’t be so pleased with yourself that you lose your senses, idiot.”

The exchange between the two made people feel as if there was some hidden secret between them. When Yin Shi heard Ling Shi’s warning, he gave a snort, but stopped speaking. Now they had no way of knowing what he had wanted to say.

“You can’t talk about it?”

Luo Shi was slightly disappointed. If Yin Shi and Ling Shi were sworn to secrecy, then he wouldn’t try to pry the answer out of them, but he still felt dejected upon having to give up.

It was as if Ling Shi had just straightforwardly said that he shouldn’t be entrusted with heavy responsibilities because he wasn’t strong enough. Yin Shi and Ling Shi’s attitudes were like tactful ways of saying that he wasn’t mature enough, and because of that, there were things he wasn’t allowed to know.

“Nope, we can’t. There will be a day when you will know, Xiao Luo Shi.”

Yin Shi looked as if he truly wanted to speak about the matter, but he resisted the urge. Ling Shi then became suspicious of something.

“How did you guys hear about this? And why would you want to know the reason for it?”

“We went to buy weapons...”

Luo Shi had originally wanted to explain exactly what had happened, but when he noticed Yue Tui’s uneasy expression, he decided to drop the idea.

“...The owner of the weapons store just happened to mention it by chance. I found it hard to believe, which is why I asked you.”

“You guys went to a weapons store? Xiao Luo Shi, are you changing to studying martial arts? If you want to learn martial arts, then I can teach you. I’m —”

Ling Shi punched Yin Shi once again, cutting the latter off mid-sentence.

“If you actually use your brain, then you’d know that’s not what he was doing. Luo Shi, you went to pick out weapons for those two, right? You truly are considerate, and you finally made some friends.”

After hearing Ling Shi’s words, Luo Shi immediately became embarrassed.

“That’s because, it’s because they were being bullied and almost got themselves killed. I just couldn’t stand by idly and do nothing...”

“It’s fine to let others know of your good intentions; why are you trying so hard to hide it?” Ling Shi added another sentence.

Luo Shi’s delicate face grew even redder upon Ling Shi’s comment. *Wow, he’s so thin-skinned...*

“They got bullied? Ah! Don’t tell me Xiao Rou got bullied too! That’s not good. I have to go see her.”

Yin Shi made to stand up but was shoved back down by Ling Shi.

“Do you know what time it is right now? What are you trying to do? Are you planning to break into a girl’s room in the middle of the night? Do you want to be in the headlines tomorrow for starting a scandal?”

“Bu-but, it’s fine if I break into her room. But what would I do if other men try to get into her room too? Ahhh!”

“No one besides you would plan to break into a girl’s room!”

That’s right! If you guys want to worry, then worry about the ones who

actually got bullied! You shouldn't even worry about someone totally uninvolved!

“Did you guys manage to buy any good weapons?” Ling Shi asked. The three people in question immediately quieted down; even the atmosphere turned down a notch.

One of them had bought a broken weapon.

And the other had bought a mop.

Did we manage to buy any good weapons? The thought resounded in all three of their heads.

“Why do you guys have such complicated expressions? Did it not go smoothly?”

Don't ask anymore. If you keep on asking, we might seriously cry. Really.

“Oh? What's that hanging from your waist? It looks pretty interesting.” As if he had discovered a novelty, Yin Shi pointed towards Fan Tong's waist, a fascinated expression on his face.

“...”

Fan Tong hesitated and struggled with himself but finally overcame the shame he felt from the question. He quietly replied, “My weapon.”

Yue Tui turned his head away, as if he couldn't bear to look on anymore. Luo Shi covered his mouth with his hand, as if hiding a smile.

Ling Shi stared at Fan Tong and the “mop” hanging on the latter's waist for a long while before opening his mouth to speak.

“Are you planning to be a custodian?”

That is too cruel. Is it alright for you to rub salt onto my wound like that, Lord Ling Shi?

“Ling Shi, that thing is awesome! I want one too!”

Yin Shi's reaction was the complete opposite of how people normally treated mops, displaying his strange tastes for everyone to see. Looking at the joy on the other's face though, Fan Tong truly wanted to swap with him. No, it was good

enough for him if he could even just get the 200 strings he'd paid for that mop back.

"Why isn't it speaking? Make it speak."

Make it speak? Fan Tong couldn't understand. In reality, he still wasn't very familiar with his mop.

"Fan Tong, I forgot to tell you, after your synchronization rate with your weapon is high enough, you can communicate with it through thoughts. So you don't need to speak out loud to talk. Looking at you now though, I see you still aren't capable of this sort of thing. Another thing is, after taking on a master, weapons won't be able to talk to other people unless they have their master's permission and they are in direct contact with another person."

Luo Shi filled him in on the facts. So it was like that. No wonder it's so quiet on the streets and in classes, even though many people carried weapons.

"Make it talk."

Yin Shi probably also knew that he shouldn't touch self-aware weapons, so he didn't rashly put his hand onto Fan Tong's weapon. Seeing that Yin Shi genuinely seemed really interested in hearing the mop speak, even though he wasn't too sure about the process, Fan Tong still tried to communicate and gave the mop a tap.

"Hey, Puhahaha, say something."

"... Hmm? Don't bother me, I'm sleeping. Fuwa..."

Puhahaha simply tossed out that line before quieting again.

Exactly who's the master here...

"That mop has quite an attitude."

It's a horsetail whisk, Lord Ling Shi. Even though I internally call it a mop myself, as its owner, hearing other people call it a mop still makes me feel kind of uncomfortable...

"What's a puhahaha?"

Yin Shi always paid attention to weird things, but this matter was even harder

for Fan Tong to talk about.

“It’s that mo... horsetail whisk’s name.”

Seeing that it was difficult for Fan Tong to say anything, Yue Tui said it in his place, but this actually wasn’t much less embarrassing for Fan Tong.

“Pu, puhahahahahaha!”

Yin Shi burst into peals of laughter. He laughed so hard he even forcefully slapped the seat next to him.

Lord Yin Shi, are you calling the mop’s name, or are you laughing? Also, could you please laugh in a more dignified manner?

“Ha...”

Even Ling Shi emitted a quiet laugh. Was it really that funny? How come Fan Tong just couldn’t laugh?

Fan Tong wanted to curl up in the corner with his head in his arms and hide, but in reality, he definitely wouldn’t do something like that. A full-grown man acting like that really wasn’t a pretty sight. Also, it truly wasn’t his fault, yet the culprit who’d caused him to be ridiculed was currently sleeping peacefully. It was just too unfair.

He really wished that everyone would stop being so fixated on his mop. Transferring everyone’s attention to something else seemed like an excellent choice, so he made up his mind to ask another question.

“I don’t have another answer I want to reply to.”

... Mm, he completely believed no one could tell that he’d wanted to say, “I have another question I want to ask.”

“Ah? What did you say?”

Yin Shi’s attention was successfully redirected, but in the wrong direction.

“Sigh, Fan Tong, you’re so...”

Luo Shi helplessly took out paper and a writing utensil and gave it to him. At times like this, Fan Tong felt that Luo Shi was very attentive.

And so Fan Tong fluidly wrote down what he had wanted to ask on the paper

and then handed it to Yin Shi.

“Why did you have to write it down? Hmm? Pure imagination? You want me to explain?”

Since Fan Tong had the rare chance to talk face to face with the rector of Shufa Xuan, who else would he ask about problems related to Shufa?

“The teacher keeps saying that Fan Tong is unqualified and that it’s impossible for him to comprehend Shufa, so he seems very concerned.”

Yue Tui explained on Fan Tong’s behalf; however, Yin Shi was extremely surprised.

“How could that be? A pure imagination is very easy to achieve. Isn’t it just the ability to understand and put yourself into the shoes of various entities?”

“There’s no point in asking him.”

“Agreed.”

Ling Shi and Luo Shi were off to the side dampening his enthusiasm. So far though, what Yin Shi was saying was quite similar to what Yue Tui had said. Perhaps if he asked Yin Shi to give an example, he’d be able to understand?

“Yin Shi, give him an example so he’ll give up hope.”

“Hmm?”

“How would you understand a kitten?”

Asking Yin Shi to explain this all of a sudden was probably more difficult for him than answering questions. Hearing this question, he beamed and immediately began speaking.

“A kitten is a kitten, you know. I think it should be called a kitten, and it’s very suited to being called a kitten. That’s what a kitten is.”

...Is there a difference between this and not answering at all?

“Then what do you think of beautiful girls?”

“Hmm? I think beautiful girls are beautiful girls”

“How do you understand hunger?”

“It must be a fresh and interesting event!”

“Your feelings toward snow?”

“I’ll try and eat it? Hmm, the weather must be nice.”

Fan Tong heard this series of answers and felt from the bottom of his heart that Yin Shi was indeed an alien.

In all honesty, this was an alien world, but Yin Shi’s weirdness was out of this world, and had moved on to another universe altogether.

Does this even have anything to do with pure imagination, understanding, or empathizing with other things? If one called it a completely self-centric point of view, they wouldn’t be wrong. There’s not one ounce of science or logic to this!

“See, even if we got him to be the teacher, we wouldn’t be able to learn any Shufa. He just got powerful on his own for no reason. He has no talent in teaching at all.”

“Ah! Xiao Luo Shi, are you complimenting me?”

...No wonder Luo Shi’s Fuzhou is so much better. Disregarding the quality of Ling Shi’s teaching, with Yin Shi as he is, anyone would be a better teacher than him.

“Basically...”

Ling Shi cut into the conversation from the side.

“If you need an explanation on what pure imagination is, then you have no hope in learning Shufa.”

Lord Ling Shi... you’re so direct.

“Thank you for treating us today. I think it’s about time we leave...”

It was indeed late into the night now. After Yue Tui spoke, Fan Tong also absentmindedly nodded his head. Before he left though, he had one more request.

“I would like to use the restroom.”

“Restroom? Go out those sliding doors on the left, walk straight down after turning right and you’ll be there.”

The one that gave him the directions was Ling Shi. It seemed he was very familiar with Yin Shi's palace.

Leave from the left door and then turn right? But there was clearly a door from the right side as well. Why not just leave directly from that door? Wouldn't that be a lot faster?

"Ah! You can't go that way..."

As Fan Tong hoped to use a shortcut and walked through the door on the right hand side, he heard Yin Shi's yell. After that, he saw rays of bright golden light passing through his body.

"Fan Tong! Didn't I tell you to go through the left door? To protect the palace against invaders, any passageways under prohibition orders are in defense mode!"

Luo Shi's voice sounded utterly discomfited. At this point, Fan Tong realized that the lights passing through his body had literally gone "through." A few of those all cutting through naturally and immediately caused fatal injuries.

Why do I feel that, every time I meet Lord Yin Shi, some kind of bloody incident happens...

"Fan Tong..."

What came with fatal injuries was death, which also meant saying goodbye to another hundred strings of money. Fan Tong didn't get to finish hearing what Yue Tui had wanted to say before his soul left his body and flew off to regenerate in the pond.

It seemed like there was no need for him to go to the restroom anymore. Ahahahaha...

© Fan Tong's Afterword

It was my first time visiting Shen Wang Dian, and I died.

My original debt of 190 strings, adding on Luo Shi's 205 and this death, that's a total of 495 strings...

I can only see complete darkness in my future. Mom, why did you give birth to me?

Ah! Ouch! Ow! Ow! Ow! Ow!

I'm currently in the process of regenerating. This is probably 290 strings worth of pain? Pain during regeneration is directly linked to one's debt. I can't regenerate painlessly anymore. The last two times I drowned, I had already experienced the pain worth 100 and 200 strings. After paying back ten strings, I accrued debt again. As expected it hurts even more... It feels kind of like a direct hit on the face from a flying ball.

At 100 strings, the pain was similar to a pinch in the face. At 200, it felt like a hard slap.

The pain resonates through the entire body, so it's not just pain on the face. I'm just trying to give examples of my experiences. How else do you want me to do this?

Speaking of which, the pain during my death was actually much more intense. That is only up to this point, though. If my debt accumulates more and more, then that might no longer be the case.

Originally, I wanted to express my feelings for Lord Wei Shi and the bountiful feast. Now, where do I find the mood...

Ouch! Ah, please just finish regenerating already! Dammit!

Next: [Chapter 6: Daily Routines](#)

Previous: [Chapter 4: So This is My... Weapon...?](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translators: Nuddles, Saviesa, Nannyn, Sherry

Proofreaders: Syrra, PiKairi, KN, Sherry

條理, which means “disorganized”, has the same pronunciation as 調理, which means “to recover one’s health”. Yin Shi is making a play on words.

The amount of the it takes to drink a cup of tea (about 10-15 minutes).

← [Chapter 4 So This is My... Weapon...? Chapter 6: Daily Routines](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

24 Comments so far:

1.  snuffie says:

[December 2, 2014 at 10:24 pm](#)

Fan Tong dies again. I laugh heartily.
Nope, there's no correlation between them, nope.
Hahaha. Ha. Ha... HAAHAHAHAHA—Ahem.

Hmm, I didn't expect that, been a long time since the last death.

[Reply](#)



2. *snuffie* says:

[November 2, 2014 at 4:23 pm](#)

I see. So that's what you call a kitten.

Puhahahhahahhahhah

[Reply](#)



3. *Vel* says:

[November 2, 2014 at 10:18 am](#)

Puhahahaha xD he's toooo funny xD thanks for the update! Makes my day
^^

[Reply](#)



4. *snuffie* says:

[October 2, 2014 at 7:50 pm](#)

"Make it talk."

Dun dun dun...!!

If it were the end of the chapter, that would sound so ominous lol.

[Reply](#)



5. *Ton* says:

[October 2, 2014 at 7:16 am](#)

My guess for the screaming is too much murder guess?
Also as expected of yin shi realising what an awesome weapon fan tong's is.

[Reply](#)



6. *Vel* says:

[September 28, 2014 at 10:59 am](#)

Thank you for translating! I truly appreciate all your hard work! Also why is luoshishi living in the 2nd palace and so far from his mom :(makes me wonder how his relationship with his mom is.. also! he's so cute, I want one.

[Reply](#)



7. *Amiric* says:

[August 2, 2014 at 2:57 pm](#)

Thanks. The update is hilarious, as always.

[Reply](#)



8. *HANA* says:

[August 2, 2014 at 2:21 pm](#)

slowly waiting for the updates..../dies
thank you anyway!!

[Reply](#)



9. *crues* says:

[July 18, 2014 at 3:46 am](#)

Thanks you so much. I have been looking for this story english translation awhile ago, but couldn't find ones. Keep working hard. Thanks for the translation so so much.

[Reply](#)



10. *snuffie* says:

[July 1, 2014 at 3:00 pm](#)

Just commenting for the sake of commenting.

[Reply](#)

○ *PiKairi* says:

[July 3, 2014 at 4:24 am](#)

LOL. There needs to be a like button just for this. XD

[Reply](#)



11. *snuffie* says:

[June 1, 2014 at 10:01 pm](#)

60% to gooo~~

[Reply](#)



12. *KT* says:

[May 25, 2014 at 6:24 am](#)

I'm more convinced then ever that Yue Tui is the Western emperor. Look how strange his reaction is when the topic comes up...

[Reply](#)

13.



黒 says:

[May 4, 2014 at 7:52 am](#)

Thanks for posting the beginning of the chapter! Soul purging weapons sound scary. Not to mention completely unfair to New Residents! Maybe if Fan Tong just got scratched with one, it would purge his curse instead. But then again with his luck... (>_<)

[Reply](#)

14.



Irid says:

[May 4, 2014 at 3:16 am](#)

I have a theory... maybe Fan Tong lost his memories because he was wounded by a soul-purging weapon?

[Reply](#)



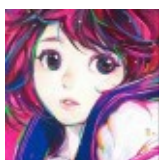
o

黒 says:

[May 4, 2014 at 7:34 am](#)

Fan Tong lost some of his memories due to the memory suppression spell Ling Shi cast on him when he first arrived in this world.

[Reply](#)



■

Syrra says:

[May 8, 2014 at 8:08 pm](#)

Yeah, but remember, Fan Tong didn't even know he was dead when he first arrived, before the memory suppression spell was used.

[Reply](#)

■  *PiKairi* says:

[May 23, 2014 at 12:29 am](#)

I just thought of something. Could it be possible that he was already dead a while ago but accidentally managed to somehow get back to the place where New Residents are revived? That way, his memories could be repressed and yet he technically could've been attacked since he was there longer... I don't know XDD Lots of theories.

[Reply](#)

■  *Syrra* says:

[June 2, 2014 at 7:31 pm](#)

Assuming that's the case, how would neither city notice the missing new resident they cherish so much? Wouldn't at least someone recognize him? Or that he was missing?

■  *PiKairi* says:

[June 3, 2014 at 8:28 pm](#)

I guess you can only nest comments 5 times, seeing as how there's no reply button.

I was actually thinking that he died twice: once for some unknown reason and the other with the emperor. Though I have no explanation to why no one would notice he was gone...

Maybe he has no friends due to the way he talks? That's kinda sad to think though.

[Reply](#)



■ *Teckie* says:

[October 2, 2014 at 4:44 am](#)

Maybe he was pulled in from his world alive as a result or as compensation of yue Tui being pulled into the other city's pond without dying? Weird idea, but possible. However, the time issue is what bothers me; exactly how long was yue Tui living alone? Can't really go back to check ATM xD

Anyway, thank you for the update, giraffes! Me loves yah :D

15.



Amiric says:

[May 1, 2014 at 5:20 pm](#)

Great chapter as always. Thanks!

[Reply](#)

16.



snuffie says:

[May 1, 2014 at 12:38 pm](#)

Thaaaaank yooooou!!

I won't hope too much that you guys will finish this chapter soon, but I sincerely wish that worldly inconveniences such as exams and whatnot be removed from your way.

[Reply](#)

17.



Sekiya says:

[May 1, 2014 at 5:12 am](#)

Thanks for translating, hope you guys complete this chapter soon! :)

[Reply](#)

Chapter 6: Daily Routines

On February 1, 2015, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [23 Comments](#)

“Eat, sleep, and fight Wei Shi.” – Yin Shi

“Isn’t there something wrong with that statement?” – Ling Shi

The moon had already risen in the west. It was time for people to rest, despite that; there were two people in a boat at the Eastern City’s rebirth pond. It could only be said that, since those who didn’t help their friends would encounter bad luck, one had to carefully choose one’s friends. Once you were friends, it would be too late; as your friends would rely on you.

“I’ve already grasped the essentials of rowing, so we shouldn’t have any problems getting there,” said Luo Shi while Yue Tui operated the paddles.

Just then, the two of them had rushed to the pond preparing to salvage Fan Tong. However, they’d forgotten that they had no experience in boating. Finding someone to help would take too long, so they had to bite the bullet and figure it out on their own.

Out of the two of them, Yue Tui had never salvaged someone from the pond, but he had Fan Tong for a friend. Perhaps in the future, he would become an expert salvager. Currently though, Yue Tui had absolutely no experience with boats and suddenly being tossed into this situation made things difficult. Although Luo Shi had salvaged someone before, his only purpose in this task was to act as the “leader.” Due to his status, it was only natural that he was the one giving instructions. Since there were only two people in the boat including himself, he could only sit down and tell Yue Tui to start rowing, which seemed rather unjustified. Friends should work together and share in each other’s hardships! Therefore, Luo Shi put aside his status as a prince and started rowing also. Fan Tong should be honored that a prince was helping to fish him out of the pond.

The two teenagers who had never rowed a boat before found it difficult to coordinate everything and were naturally very confused. It could only be said

that they lacked mutual understanding. Fortunately, after flailing around for a bit and nearly capsizing, Yue Tui got the hang of things and was able to coordinate with Luo Shi. At last, the boat went forward.

Since the moon exerted a strong influence on the pond, using Shufa Fuzhou was impossible. They could only rely on the strength of their own body, so they had to dutifully row the boat. If they could use Fuzhou, then they wouldn't have had any difficulties. Again, there wasn't any need to make things so troublesome!

"Row towards the other side of the pond," Luo Shi instructed, but Yue Tui didn't understand.

"Huh? Why?"

"Because Fan Tong is unlucky. He's so unlucky that he would surely be reborn in a place that's far away from the dock and also very difficult to swim from."

Yue Tui laughed bitterly at Luo Shi's theory. It was a reasonable argument. Only, if Fan Tong was truly unlucky, they'd probably reach their destination only to find that he had been reborn in the middle or the front of the pond. They would pass by him completely.

"Yue Tui?"

"Yes?"

"Do you know why you can't touch self-aware weapons?" Luo Shi suddenly asked, catching Yue Tui off guard. The guilty look on Yue Tui's face could be considered as an answer, as it explained everything.

"I'm sorry. I just... It's a matter that I can't explain to you." Even though Luo Shi had seen right through him, Yue Tui truly didn't understand the matter all that well, so he could only hide what he knew and apologize.

"You aren't actually Hui Shi, right?" Luo Shi said in an incredulous tone and fixed a clear gaze on the other.

"No, I'm not Hui Shi," Yue Tui straightforwardly rejected the possibility. Even though he heard the reply, Luo Shi was still unwilling to give up.

"Then why do you look just like him?"

It was a truly vexing question. Even if they looked alike, Yue Tui had no idea why.

“I heard something over there; maybe it’s Fan Tong...” Yui Tui was initially perplexed and didn’t know how to answer. Just then, he suddenly heard a sound in the pond. He immediately brought the matter up and quickly pointed to the place where the sound came from.

“Tch, as expected, he ended up regenerating there. Let’s quickly row over!”

“Alright.”

In this rebirth, Fan Tong realized something: the problems of incurring debt. Besides the pain that came along with regeneration, there was also the risk to his survival after he finished regenerating.

After suffering through the agony of another rebirth, his body limply floated up through the pond. His limbs wouldn’t move according to his wishes, yet he had to start swimming if he wanted to live. The chances of his body suddenly cramping and then his subsequent drowning was extremely high!

Fortunately, just when he floated up to the surface of the pond, he heard Luo Shi and Yue Tui’s voices. To Fan Tong, it was like hearing the voices of angels.

Ah... This is great. I actually have people here to pick me up. I don’t have to swim ashore myself. All that painstaking effort in making friends on my part, wasn’t it all for this very moment?

“Yue Tui, throw the net... Huh? Why don’t we have a net?”

Luo Shi’s voice sounded distressed. Their boat was missing the essential tool for fishing someone out of the pond.

“Eh? We need a net? I saw some on the shore, but I didn’t bring any with us.”

Yue Tui didn’t know that picking someone up from the Rebirth Pond equaled fishing them out with a net. He didn’t make the connection when he saw the nets lying on the shore. Sure enough, it was easy to make a mistake when one wasn’t experienced.

The currently floating Fan Tong became silent when he heard the other two’s conversation.

Hey, why are you guys so unprofessional? Shouldn't you two be more careful? Don't tell me you forgot to bring everything, including my clothes?! Do you want me to go ashore naked? Even if we are all guys, it would still be awkward!

"We'll have to row in closer and pull him up. There's no other way."

After Luo Shi made the decision, he and Yue Tui started rowing the boat towards Fan Tong. But, as they weren't very skilled in rowing, another tragedy occurred.

The small boat collided head-on with Fan Tong. He sank back into the pond and choked down a large mouthful of water.

"Yue Tui, I said to row in closer and pull him up! Why did you collide with him?"

Luo Shi's voice sounded extremely frightened. At that moment, he swung his paddle and smacked Fan Tong, who had just floated up, back into the depths of the pond.

"Luo Shi, your paddle just struck him on the head!"

Yue Tui also sounded extremely nervous. Fan Tong, on the other hand, was speechless.

I say... Do the two of you want to kill me? Are you guys here to save me or to harm me? Are you guys deliberately forcing me to curse on paper? Yue Tui, don't think that nothing would happen to you just because you can't read the Eastern City's language. My English may not be good, but I am well-versed in English profanities.

"Fa-Fan Tong, grab my hand."

Fan Tong was choking and feeling lightheaded; he flailed wildly and grabbed onto Yue Tui's hand. Just when Yue Tui was about to pull him up to the boat, Luo Shi cried out in alarm. Clearly, something else had happened.

"Yue Tui, the boat's leaning sideways! We'll capsize like this!"

Then you should go stand at the opposite side and use your weight to maintain the boat's balance. What are you doing coming over here? Do you actually want to capsize?

"Oh? Then, should I let go of Fan Tong?"

Yue Tui was undecided. To let go of his nearly drowning friend was slightly... No, it was clearly very cruel.

“Pu— Cough—”

No! Don't abandon me! I don't want to die! Don't bully me because I can't speak right now due to my choking—

Splash! The boat rocked back and forth and then stabilized. Both Yue Tui and Luo Shi had jumped into the pond.

“Hah... Fan Tong, we'll swim back with you to shore. Here, I'll support you,” Yue Tui said helplessly, sweeping back his dripping, golden hair.

“Your bad luck is truly rubbing off on us. By being together with you, we have to suffer too!”

Since Luo Shi had also jumped down, he was drenched through and through. He grumbled as he treaded water to keep afloat. It appeared that both Yue Tui and Luo Shi were good at swimming.

However... The situation had developed to such a stage. This time's fishing could be said to have been a huge failure.

“Relax so you can float,” Yue Tui instructed Fan Tong on how to adapt to being in the middle of the pond. Fan Tong felt somewhat wronged. *How can I relax in front of you two when I'm completely naked?*

“Fan Tong, if you're not going to swim, then do you need us to support you all the way to shore?” Luo Shi narrowed his eyes dangerously.

“Didn't you bring any clothes for me?” Fan Tong finally found an opportunity to bring up this important issue.

“Ah!” Yue Tui cried out and looked at the boat that had floated some distance away. He shook his head.

“Swimming while wearing clothes will only make it more difficult on you. You can just put on clothes when we reach the shore.”

“If you say it like that, then you guys should also put on clothes!” *No, I meant*

to say that you guys should also take off your clothes, so that we'll all be in the same situation.

“Are you trying to tell us to undress? Ah, who cares about you?” Luo Shi understood what he'd meant, but was completely uninterested in complying.

“It's hard to undress underwater, especially when our clothes are already wet,” Yue Tui explained.

That is definitely an excuse. Don't give me excuses! Just take your clothes off!

“Hurry up and swim. We still need to sleep.” There was truth to that sentence, as Yue Tui appeared extremely weary. Yue Tui had indeed done a lot of running around today, and rowing all the way out here must have been tiring. However, Fan Tong had just been reborn, so he was full of energy. *After we go home, I'm afraid I won't be able to sleep at all.*

“You've already drowned twice, but since you didn't drown this time, shouldn't you be able to swim?” Fan Tong believed that he hadn't told Luo Shi about the matter of him drowning before. Could it be that Luo Shi had looked it up? Did the city keep records on New Residents' deaths? He had died in such a stupid way that day, though no one was around to see it. *Such information is actually available to the public? There aren't any privacy rights here, are there?!*

But as Luo Shi had specifically researched how he died; he was probably truly concerned for him. Though Fan Tong still preferred it if no one knew that he'd died so stupidly. That being said, every single one of his deaths up till now had been stupid. *As long as my deaths don't become even more stupid from now on, should I consider it as an improvement?*

Anyways, the three people who had nothing better to do began swimming towards the shore. They left the boat where it was, as Luo Shi could just order someone to deal with it later.

“Hand—gurgle—foot hurts...”

It was a trying test of Fan Tong's physical strength and ability to swim from the point he had been reborn to the shore. It wasn't all that strange for his body to start hurting after swimming halfway.

“Is it your hand or your foot?”

It's hard even for me to tell, but it doesn't matter whether it's my hand or my foot, can't you tell I need help?

"Fan Tong, pull yourself together. Just use the hand and foot that aren't hurting to swim..." Yue Tui told him a method of swimming that no normal person could possibly accomplish. Maybe Yue Tui himself could do it, so he instructed him as if other people had the same ability. In conclusion, Yue Tui was a truly unique existence.

"Impossible! It's possible for normal people!"

"Is it possible or impossible?" Luo Shi once again added from the side.

I think a normal person would know that I meant to say "impossible." I really do.

Anyway, my feet hurt. I can't continue swimming. I'm going to drown no matter what. You guys don't have to worry about me anymore.

"Fa-Fan Tong!" Yue Tui reached out and dragged him back up. Seeing the situation, Luo Shi also swam over to help.

"Fan Tong, do you really have such little desire to live? Dying will cost you another hundred strings."

Luo Shi, you are clearly a Natural Resident. How can you use something like money to calculate the value of a human life?

Three people... No, two people plus one dead weight, finally arrived at the shore after many difficulties. Fan Tong hurriedly put on the clothes that Yue Tui had brought him from the exit. Only then did he regain a measure of comfort.

"Let's leave first, then we'll be able to use Fuzhou and Shufa again."

It's a good thing Fuzhou and Shufa can be used to dry off. Both Luo Shi and Yue Tui are soaking wet right now, if they don't dry off, they might get sick.

"Oh right. Fan Tong, as you've started carrying around a few personal items with you, there are some things you must understand. When you die, your soul will go to the pond to be reborn, but your personal belongings will remain behind at the spot where you died. If you were carrying around something important, you'll have to return to that place to collect it. If you get robbed, then your

things are just gone. People passing by will often steal things like money, so don't expect too much." Fan Tong's expression sank as he listened to Luo Shi's explanation. Dying was already depressing enough, but now it also caused one to become penniless. Wasn't Luo Shi just telling him that he shouldn't carry around too many things?

That being said, isn't the mop still at Yin Shi's place? Just leaving it there doesn't seem like a bad option.

"Don't worry Fan Tong; I've brought your mop along with me... Ah! I left it on the boat!" The second Yue Tui finished speaking, his face paled considerably.

By "left it on the boat," do you mean that you left it on that small boat over there in the middle of the pond? Well then... Job well done, Yue Tui. You don't need to retrieve it. I don't want it in any case. It's fine just leaving it there for some lucky person to pick up. Even then, other people probably wouldn't want it either.

"It doesn't matter. I'll get someone to retrieve it and return it to you later. Nobody would pick up that sort of thing anyways."

Luo Shi, although your intentions are good, I think you're just being a busybody... Regardless, since I always have to bring a weapon with me when I go out, maybe the next time I accidentally die, there won't be anyone around, then I can get rid of Puhahaha!

Why does it seem like I've just cursed myself to die again?

"Fan Tong, I was just thinking." Luo Shi looked rather serious, so Fan Tong also regarded him solemnly. "That two hundred and five strings... There's no need to pay me back. Your debt just keeps increasing, and since this amount money means nothing to me, I'll just write it off."

Fan Tong didn't expect Luo Shi to suddenly say something like that. He was a little surprised. He'd always thought Luo Shi was the type of person who would say "Even if we're friends, we still have to settle our accounts." He'd never expected Luo Shi to suddenly reveal a charitable side. Was it because after having seen him die so many times, and in such miserable ways, Luo Shi couldn't help but feel sympathetic towards him?

However, as a man of indomitable spirit, not paying back his debt was something he shouldn't do. Due to that, Fan Tong reluctantly decided to refuse the offer.

"How can I allow that! I borrowed money from you, so it's only right that I return every single bit of it back to you!" After Fan Tong spoke, Luo Shi's expression became cold.

"So you never intended to pay me back?"

Eh? What? Ah, I had spoken correctly just now, but you believe I had spoken the opposite because of the curse, is that it?

"Just now, the sentence I'd spoken hadn't been affected by the curse. I sincerely believe I should pay you back..."

"There's no need to continue repeating how much you don't want to repay me. It doesn't matter."

"That's not it!"

"Forget it. Since the words are already out, I can't take them back just because you never intended on repaying me."

It's an misunderstanding! A big misunderstanding! How come I spoke three sentences in a row and none of them were affected by the curse? What is the probability of that? A tenth of a tenth of a tenth?

"Fan Tong, even if you didn't intend on repaying Luo Shi, you don't have to be so obvious about it," Yue Tui advised him.

Since when did the two of you become so chummy with each other? Yue Tui, how come you aren't helping me out? Why did you change sides?

"Luo Shi, thank you for today. We've caused you quite a lot of trouble," Yue Tui then said to Luo Shi, speaking in an extremely polite manner. As for Fan Tong, he thought that there was no need to be overly polite when speaking with friends... The three of them could be considered friends, right?

Luo Shi's attitude towards him was friendlier than how Zhu Sha treated him. He might need to give more thought on how to improve his relationship with that roommate of his. The problem was that even though he'd already explained

his curse to Zhu Sha, the latter didn't believe it. Zhu Sha already regarded him as an incessant liar, correcting that seemed a bit difficult.

"You're welcome. It didn't take all that much effort. There's no need to thank me," Luo Shi responded in the same polite tone out of habit. In any case, they knew what he'd meant, so the superficial words didn't affect them.

"Also, Fan Tong, even though you unexpectedly died at Yin Shi's place, you had been told specifically to go through the left door. But you just had to go through another door, so your death this time is because of your own stupidity. Since it's like that, it's unlikely Yin Shi will help you out by paying your rebirth fee."

Oh, my heart feels so cold. Are people not allowed to be arrogant once in a while and do some unnecessary things? Can't we talk this over? Luo Shi, can you write off my debt to the Eastern City instead? I'll repay the debt I owe you personally when I get the money. At least that way, when I die next time, I won't experience even more pain during the rebirth.

"Oh yeah, your leftovers have already been delivered to your dorm, you should see them when you return home."

That was very considerate of Luo Shi. In fact, when they were still at Yin Shi's place, Fan Tong had already been contemplating on how they were going to carry so much food back to their dorm.

"I should probably go home then. Goodbye!"

"Yes, goodbye."

"

"Fan Tong, shut up."

Luo Shi, you can be so vicious at times.

Fan Tong and Yue Tui parted ways with Luo Shi at the entrance of the Rebirth Pond. The two of them immediately went back to their dorm. The sooner they returned, the sooner they could go to sleep, then they wouldn't have to suffer through a day of sleep deprivation tomorrow. However, when they opened the door to their room, they saw a will-o'-the-wisp floating inside.

“Wh-what happened?” Fan Tong said, his courage wavering. The strange atmosphere in the room made him want to flee.

“I don’t know...” Yue Tui said, but he still courageously walked into the room, turning on the lights as he did.

With the lights on, the room didn’t seem as sinister anymore. Fan Tong looked around and found that there were quite a few boxes stacked around the room; which probably contained the leftovers Yin Shi had sent over. The source of the gloomy atmosphere, Zhu Sha, was currently sitting on his bed and hugging his knees.

“Zhu Sha?”

He can’t be angry, right? They had been gone the entire day without telling him, and had only returned now.

But if he was truly worried, couldn’t he have just used his communication charm to contact us?

“Oh... You’re back,” Zhu Sha lifted his head and glanced at them, a dismal look on his face. He then buried his face back between his knees.

“Zhu Sha, what happened to you?” It was rare seeing him so dejected. Fan Tong couldn’t help but ask concernedly.

“I overslept... I overslept so much that I ended up missing class...” Zhu Sha looked as if the world had ended.

So he was depressed over this... He really is a good student.

“I’m sorry, because you told us not to disturb you while you are sleeping, we didn’t wake you up.” Yue Tui immediately apologized, feeling guilty for not waking Zhu Sha. This morning, he had hesitated on the matter. In the end, Yue Tui decided to respect Zhu Sha’s wishes and let him sleep. He’d never thought that missing class would make the latter so dejected.

“I’m the one who overslept... I just, randomly didn’t wake up...” It seemed like Zhu Sha was blaming himself instead of them. , But they still felt a little responsible for not waking him up.

He just missed class for one day. Is it really that serious? He’s making it like it’s

the end of the world. That being said, until when did he sleep?

“Then... Have you eaten anything today? We have some leftovers. Do you want anything to eat?” In addition to always attending school, Zhu Sha also persisted in eating three meals every day. Yue Tui asked him in the hopes that it would lift his spirits.

“No, I can’t. I have to punish myself...”

He really is depressed, to see so much food and not even be a little curious about where it all came from.

“If you’re not going to eat anything, then why don’t you get some rest so you can go to school tomorrow? It’s already very late.” Yue Tui gently suggested, but Zhu Sha shook his head.

“You guys can go sleep... Don’t bother with me.”

Since the depressed person already said not to bother with him, all they could do was leave him alone for the moment.

Yue Tui nimbly climbed up to the middle bunk and immediately went to sleep. Fan Tong also climbed up to the top bunk. Things like showering could wait for when he got up in the morning. Besides, he just had a swim in the pond. Instead of showering, the thing troubling him the most at the moment was the fact that he was full of energy after his rebirth. He couldn’t sleep at all.

At the end of every month, when the moon was full, the Eastern City held a “Judgment Day.”

Criminals yet to be judged were sentenced according to the severity of their crimes and those who received the death sentence would be condemned to die on the same day the next month.

If there was a controversial or significant case, then the queen and her five attendants would preside over it.

The final decision, however, rested in the hands of the queen. The accused’s relatives always tried all sorts of ways to plead for mercy, but the Queen always remained indifferent.

Usually, no more than ten cases were referred to the queen and the five attendants every month. Trials were conducted in Shen Wang Dian, on a pavilion outside the first palace where the criminals were escorted to. Letting them be there in person to defend themselves was ironic though, since the only people brought to Shen Wang Dian are those accused of felonies and gagged with a Shufa rendering them unable to speak.

The queen and the five attendants usually discussed the case among themselves, while the accused waited silently for their fate to be decided. Only when asked a question could the accused speak, at which point someone would undo the Shufa that kept them silent. Often though, a verdict would be reached without the criminal ever being allowed to speak.

“This is my least favorite day of the month,” Yin Shi would always mumble to himself. But he had no choice except to attend and so he was always on edge on Judgement Day.

Ling Shi felt that it was no different from any other day of the month, except that he would surely see Wei Shi, which put him in bit of a bad mood.

Luo Shi always confronted the day with a serious manner, although he was usually very upset.

Although Xi Ying always presided over the trials, no one could ever determine her mood. Her face was always cold and expressionless – even more so in the past two years since Hui Shi’s disappearance. Ever since Hui Shi disappeared, she had also been much quicker to reach a verdict during the trials.

Or perhaps it should be said, she had been quicker to sentence accused criminals to death.

The only one who seemed to like this day, so much so that one could say it was his favorite day of the month, was Wei Shi.

If the criminal on trial was a Natural Resident, he remained impartial. Regrettably, on the Judgment Day, 80% of the criminals brought to Shen Wang Dian were New Residents.

Wei Shi apparently considered the suffering and misfortune of New Residents to be a source of happiness. Every time a New Resident was on trial he would do

his utmost to give them severe punishments, preferably the death penalty. His malice was successful because the Queen usually took his advice.

It could be that he simply loathed New Residents, but regardless, this was one of the reasons why everyone hated him. It would not be wrong to call him the greatest enemy of New Residents.

As for why Queen Xi Ying always accepted Wei Shi's suggestions, there were many different opinions. There were those who thought that Queen Xi Ying simply had the same mindset as Wei Shi, that she simply loathed New Residents, while others said that it was because Wei Shi understood the Queen's mindset best. There had always been a lot of gossip on this subject, but after the most dramatic gossipers were arrested and punished, no one dared to tread on the topic anymore.

"Death penalty. If someone commits one crime, they will definitely commit a second and it may even be worse than the first one. New Residents simply cannot be trusted, and I believe there is no more to discuss for this case. We should directly deal a death sentence. This time next month Eastern City will have one less piece of trash."

They were on the third trial of the day and two people had already been sentenced to death. Just like in the past, Wei Shi simply wanted to hand out the most severe punishment.

After this barbaric statement, Yin Shi lost his patience and decided to mock him. "You always say the same meaningless words on every Judgment Day. Forget about directly sentencing people to death. Going by your words, everyone is damned!"

Looking down his nose, Wei Shi replied, "If you have an opinion about the trial, I suggest that you find a stronger argument to defend the accused. You're speaking nonsense, and you won't help anyone like this."

Perhaps one of the reasons why Wei Shi liked Judgment Day was because he could arrogantly suppress people he considered objectionable, since the entire day was pretty much his "one-man show."

"Ah, how dare you call my words nonsensical! Damn Wei Shi, do you want me to show you what true nonsense is? Your hair has just grown back, but so has

your . In these past years, you haven't managed to rise a single rank and change the color of your tassel, yet you still dare to be this loudmouthed—”

“Yin Shi, stop talking.” said Xi Ying emotionlessly, not wanting the trial to turn into a farce. She also didn't want those two fighting on the pavilion.

“Ying, you're always like this... telling me to stop talking but never telling that damn Wei Shi to shut up...”

“Are you going to stop talking?” When she narrowed her eyes at him, Yin Shi had no choice but to obediently shut up and sulk by himself.

“Your Majesty, I earnestly request that you sentence this criminal to death.”

Turning towards Xi Ying, Wei Shi spoke respectfully, not forgetting to throw a gloating look towards the disadvantaged Yin Shi.

“Ling Shi! Doesn't it look like that damn Wei Shi needs a beating?” Yin Shi said through gritted teeth as he forcefully pulled at a corner of Ling Shi's clothes.

“Do you really think Ying will indulge you when you both just had a fight in front of her? In the end, have you still not learned your lesson? How many times has this happened?” Although Ling Shi disliked Wei Shi, he didn't feel the same as Yin Shi.

“I'm seriously angry!” Yin Shi's restlessness was completely different from Ling Shi's cool-headed attitude, but Ling Shi felt no need to calm him down as long as he wasn't causing a commotion at the moment.

“Do as Wei Shi says,” Xi Ying said indifferently, agreeing with Wei Shi's judgment. Hearing this, Wei Shi was extremely pleased with himself. He gave the signal for the death penalty to be written down as the official sentence, and signaled for the criminal to be taken away.

One could tell by looking at the gleeful expression on his face, as if he had just won a game, one that he would probably never get tired of playing; a game of toying with other peoples' fate.

Continuing on, the fourth criminal was brought out and his crimes were recited, and the trial of the fourth criminal of the day officially began.

“Put him to death. I think his argument of 'self-defense' is completely

unsupportable. Continuing to allow this kind of person to walk around Eastern City will only cause more harm to Natural Residents.” As always, Wei Shi rushed to give his opinion about why the accused should be sentenced to death, and this time, Luo Shi couldn’t help but to try refuting him.

“I believe that his crime isn’t worthy of death. That Natural Resident didn’t die, and a misunderstanding is what caused the incident. The attack wasn’t premeditated, and the prisoner shows remorse, not to mention there could be factors that we don’t know about. Dealing out the death penalty so quickly is not fair to the prisoner.”

Hearing Luo Shi’s opinion, Xi Ying frowned, remaining silent. Wei Shi gave him a contemptuous look, thinking that he was too naïve, and continued speaking.

“Doing that would reach the limit of indulgence; New Residents are outsiders and cannot be trusted. Instead of contemplating issues concerning New Residents, we should do as much as possible to protect the interests of Natural Residents. Someone like this person could potentially harm Natural Residents, so there is no reason to give him another chance to do so.”

“Wei Shi, who have you ever given another chance?” Luo Shi couldn’t stop himself from speaking out in anger after hearing that kind of twisted logic; he certainly couldn’t go on listening to it. “We bring the New Residents here, we exploit the New Residents, but once again you’re saying that we can’t trust the outsiders, isn’t that just too extreme? You always blindly demean New Residents, never trying to understand them, shouldn’t you know why their souls are attracted by the power of Chen Yue? Many of the New Residents suffered a lot in their original worlds, most of them suffered a miserable fate, and there are even people who were massacred. Since we welcome them as residents of Eastern City, then we should give them a new start. With the hope that life brings, shouldn’t they be allowed to heal their wounds? They are also alive, they also strive to be hard-working residents of Eastern City! You can’t always act as if the Natural Residents are the masters of New Residents, as if the New Residents are tools that you can just throw out whenever you want and replace them with another!”

In the past, during Judgment Days, Luo Shi often spoke up on behalf of New Residents, but this was the first time he had spoken so much. Yin Shi and Ling Shi

looked towards him, surprised.

Wei Shi, however, remained unmoved. “Yes, I do indeed believe that the New Residents are tools that can be discarded. Furthermore, I believe that they need to clearly recognize this. They should try to make themselves useful instead of making things troublesome for their masters. You want to talk about life? They’re already dead. As for saying that they deserve sympathy for their suffering, that’s even more ridiculous. One of Chen Yue’s conditions for attracting souls is that the soul must have a deep obsession. How do you know that they weren’t heinous criminals in their original worlds who were executed for their crimes? There’s no need to let them heal their wounds, give them hope, or show them compassion. Sealing off their memories with Shufa should be enough, that’s the most rational thing to do.” With that, Wei Shi slammed his right fist onto the table. “You side with the New Residents, forgetting to consider what Natural Residents think. How can Xi Ying feel at ease knowing that you will inherit her position as the city’s ruler? The Natural Residents are your people, we are the same, the New Residents are nothing!”

Hearing this long mess of a speech, Luo Shi wanted to refute his words, but couldn’t find his voice.

Xi Ying didn’t look at him or at Wei Shi. She just coldly looked ahead, as if she hadn’t heard the debate.

“So you also know that Xiao Luo Shi will inherit his mother’s position, so why are you pitting yourself against him, you’ll end up dead later...” Yin Shi chattered annoyingly from his seat. Of course, everyone around him could hear the annoying chatter, and after Xi Ying gave him another look, he quieted down.

“Mother, please give the accused another chance.” Luo Shi begged in a weak voice, hoping that he could still change the outcome of the trial.

“Your Majesty, in order to protect Natural Residents, you must sentence the accused to death, this is the most correct thing to do.” Of course, Wei Shi still wanted the accused to be executed.

Xi Ying was silent for a moment, and then made her decision. “Do as Wei Shi says.”

The fate of the accused still did not change. Seeing the person being taken

away, Luo Shi bit down on his lip, finding it difficult to accept.

“Ah...” Ling Shi usually never expressed his opinions during the trials. For him, Xi Ying’s words were the law. Even if he did have an opinion about a case, he would never try to influence Xi Ying’s decisions, as it was his role to simply obey. Therefore, he could only sigh and listen to Yin Shi’s complaints.

After the details of the fifth criminal’s case were read out, Wei Shi was once again the first one to speak. “Death—”

“Death penalty! We all know that that’s what you are going to say! Is it really necessary to listen to you say it again? Ah, this is boring, when is this going to be over? Wei Shi’s voice is so damn unpleasant to listen to.” Yin Shi yawned rudely, as if he found the whole day to be unbearable.

“Interrupting other people is extremely discourteous behavior. Did you not have lessons on proper etiquette?” Wei Shi protested unhappily, but Yin Shi didn’t pay any attention to him.

“Ying, are you going to tell me to shut up again?”

Xi Ying’s expression wasn’t pretty, but she didn’t reply right away.

“This case is only a small matter. We can teach him a lesson by giving him a hundred lashes. We resort to the death penalty too much. We are always executing people, even our own citizens. I really don’t like it. Damn Wei Shi is too cruel, and you’re becoming cruel just like him. Nobody would dare to associate with a girl like that, so don’t give out the death penalty again.”

Xi Ying still didn’t answer, so Wei Shi angrily rebuked Yin Shi. “When you address Her Majesty, you need to consider your attitude! A hundred lashes? Can that even be considered a punishment? How can a generous sentence like that even serve as a warning? If we merely served out lashes, no one in the city would think twice of committing a crime! If that kind of thing were to happen, would you be willing to take responsibility?”

“Ah, Ling Shi, we’ve misunderstood Wei Shi! We’d thought he was biased and cruel, turns out he’s just afraid to bear the responsibility for *not* administering the death penalty.”

“What do you mean by that?! You need to talk less rubbish.”

“We always go with whatever Wei Shi decides, so what’s the point of gathering us three other attendants here? You might as well let me leave so I can go find Xiao Rou to play.” Once again ignoring Wei Shi’s protests, Yin Shi directly spoke to Xi Ying, but the latter pursed her lips, apparently disapproving his words.

“Enough. I can make my own judgments. There is no need for you to be so talkative. Death penalty.”

“Ah—” Yin Shi made a disgruntled noise when he saw Xi Ying once again siding with Wei Shi. Ling Shi immediately cut him off by pinching his arm and whispering, “It’d be better for you to refrain from talking so much.”

“Eh? Don’t talk? But then Wei Shi would get to make all the decisions!” Yin Shi whispered back.

“What I’m saying is, don’t add in so many unnecessary words... Forget it, if I were to wait for you to understand, I might have to wait until my next life.”

“What?”

The fifth criminal also couldn’t escape his fate. The only one who was happy about the results of the trial was probably Wei Shi.

Two more criminals were brought in and then carried out. Finally, the last criminal was brought in. By then, the only one who still seemed willing to speak was Wei Shi. For the others, even if they did speak out, the results wouldn’t change. This was the greatest example of the idea that it was pointless to speak sometimes.

“Death penalty.” With her ice cold voice, Xi Ying dealt out the sentence, sealing the criminal’s fate.

All of the criminals had been judged; today’s trials were officially over. As if she had no interest in lingering in the room for another second, Xi Ying immediately stood up, undid the Shufa boundary around the stage, and walked down.

Beneath the stage, guards were trying to drag the last condemned criminal out of the room. A stunned expression was on the criminal’s face, as if he couldn’t believe what was happening. When he saw Xi Ying walk down the stage, even though he was scared of the guards, he tried to throw them off, and shouted at her.

“Your Majesty! Why? I didn’t do anything wrong, they attacked me first! I’m the victim here, why must I be the one to be executed?”

Immediately afterwards, Yin Shi and the others watched as the New Resident-hating Wei Shi reprimanded the criminal.

“The judgment has already been made, so whatever you say now is useless. Won’t you guys shut him up? Are you going to continue allowing him to offend Her Majesty?”

Hearing Wei Shi’s instructions, the guards understood and tried to handle the situation. But in the end, they began to panic, since they didn’t have anything to cover the criminal’s mouth.

“This judgment is not fair! Why did you so carelessly decide to have me killed? Release me, I won’t accept this! I won’t go back to prison and wait to die. Murdering people like this, you’re all guilty, all guilty—”

The guards had not resolved the situation in time, and the accused took the opportunity to protest some more. Finally, they used their hands to grab the criminal and covered his mouth, but at this time, Xi Ying took a step forward.

She lifted her hand, not too slow and not too fast. Her slender fingers emerged from her long sleeves and deadly ice-blue lightning bolts shot from her hand, piercing the forehead of the criminal who had spoken rudely. They went straight through his brain and out the back of his head, leaving several terrible, bloody holes.

“Rude pariah.”

The guards who were originally holding the criminal finally became aware that the person had already been turned into a corpse, and that just a moment ago, when Xi Ying had moved her hand, there had been power in it, along with light. Everyone at the scene naturally knew what it meant.

They did not need to bother going to the pool to retrieve the prisoner, because it was already impossible for that person to revive from the pool.

“Ying...” Seeing this, Yin Shi looked as if he wanted to say something, but Xi Ying paid him no attention and left, Wei Shi following behind. Luo Shi stared dully at the bloody scene for a while until the guards carried away the corpse,

and he left with an ugly look on his face.

“...Ying used to talk to me about all the city’s affairs. How did she become like this...” Yin Shi said absentmindedly, seeming somewhat melancholic. “Surely it’s that damn Wei Shi’s fault! Ling Shi, tonight, can we steal into his room and throw out his clothes?”

“You want to do what to his clothes? Anyway, where would you put them?” Ling Shi sighed, and regarded him for a bit. “Speaking of pretty boys, you could also be called one, except you don’t act like one.”

“Ah! What are you saying? You’ll have to go and be an old pretty boy by yourself. I have Xiao Rou!” Yin Shi said, rubbing the side of his head. “I’m in a bad mood. I’m going to chat with Xiao Rou, so I’m leaving now.”

“You’re truly serious?” Hearing Yin Shi mention Bi Rou again, Ling Shi asked another question. “You’re the one who placed the mark on her body. Aren’t you worried that she might be just another Luo Yue spy?”

With this kind of sensitive topic being brought up, Yin Shi couldn’t feel happy. “What, old man, aren’t you also quite fond of her?”

“I don’t dislike her. I just want to confirm how you see her.”

“Xiao Rou couldn’t be evil. Your brain is broken. All day long, you suspect that there could be a Western City spy. Am I not the Western City’s biggest spy? Why don’t you arrest me, hmph.”

“You’re not, right? Do not say this kind of thing. You will make Ying uncomfortable,” said Ling Shi, intending to finish the conversation. “I’m going to go. Ying’s clothes are bloodstained. I’m going to make sure she doesn’t need to change.” Ling Shi truly was a dutiful attendant. Yin Shi waved a goodbye, then left Shen Wang Dian himself.

Coincidentally, the school had let the students out for vacation on the same day as Judgement Day. Fan Tong should’ve been happily making arrangements and planning what he wanted to do over the break. Unfortunately, he didn’t actually have the means to live such a leisurely life.

Yue Tui and Zhu Sha could happily plan how to spend their vacation, but Mi Zhong had dragged him away for a temporary job assignment. He had to give up his valuable personal time in order to pay back his debt.

“Fan Tong, this job isn’t bad. It’s both effortless and simple, so why do you have on such a bitter expression?”

Half the reason is because you’re my work partner, the other half is because your words are simply a bunch of nonsense.

They were currently standing guard on top of the city wall. It really was a simple job, as they didn’t even need to move. However, what did Mi Zhong mean by saying the job was “effortless?” The so-called “no need to move” was actually “they weren’t allowed to move.” They had to stand there for the entire day, could that really be considered effortless and simple work?

Mi Zhong had told him that he could pay off 10 more strings of debt if he stood guard for the entire day. With that, his debt would officially change to 280 strings. Fan Tong honestly felt powerless at that revelation. Compared to the job he had during Chen Yue Jie, it was much more difficult to earn money now. Truly...

“I’ll tell you if there are any more opportunities to earn money, so why don’t you help me get Lord Ling Shi’s autograph?”

Mi Zhong made that kind of request whenever he had the opportunity to. His obsession over Ling Shi was something Fan Tong completely couldn’t understand.

If you really want a noble goddess to keep in your heart as a source of comfort, then why don’t you find an actual “goddess” instead of a “god?” Are there not any beautiful women in Eastern City? The queen’s looks aren’t bad; even though her son Luo Shi is almost an adult. She should be pretty old, but at least she looks as if she’s in her twenties. She’s also the queen, so why do you think she’s incomparable to Ling Shi?

Regarding Mi Zhong’s request, Fan Tong vigorously shook his head as he was afraid of opening his mouth and having his curse flip his words again. Help him get an autograph? He really didn’t want Ling Shi to think of him as strange.

“You really are no fun, aren’t you? Anyways, since you know so many important people, why haven’t you used those connections to get rid of your debt? This is very suspicious. Don’t tell me you’ve been lying about knowing them?”

When it came to “knowing important people,” Fan Tong felt that he actually wasn’t very familiar with them. He was somewhat familiar with Luo Shi. Yin Shi liked to call himself their friend. As for Ling Shi, he couldn’t tell whether or not he saw them in a friendly way. Fan Tong felt that his connections with these important people were all due to an accident that was completely unrelated to making friends.

In order to keep Mi Zhong from nagging him even more, Fan Tong decided to not provoke the man by bringing up the matter of him having seen Ling Shi in casual clothes.

“Mi Zhong, we’re having a good conversation. Let’s talk about something boring.”

It should be I want him to talk about something interesting since I’m bored. My words got flipped again.

“Something boring? Do you want me to tell you a story? What price are you willing to pay in exchange for my services?”

“If you want to act familiar with me, then you should at least make an effort to be sincere about our friendship.”

“Oh! Then, Fan Tong, what do you want to hear?” Mi Zhong immediately put on a pleasing face, one that was worthy of a professional.

Although Mi Zhong was going to tell him a story, Fan Tong didn’t know what he wanted to hear about. At the moment, he still wasn’t very familiar with this world. The place he was most familiar with was probably the Rebirth Pond... So really, he didn’t know much!

“Say whatever you want.”

“Ooh, alright. Last time, weren’t we talking about Englar, the young emperor of Luo Yue? I’ll tell you some new rumors about him, how does that sound?”

Englar was the emperor who had allegedly killed three hundred thousand people single-handedly. Fan Tong still didn't know if that was true or not. He thought for a bit, listening to a story about that kind of legendary character didn't seem so bad. Besides, hadn't Luo Shi told him that it was good to know the enemy? It wasn't a bad idea to let Mi Zhong clear things up for him.

Fan Tong nodded in response. These days, he was nodding and shaking his head more often to express his emotions.

"Ahem! Last time, I mentioned that he had single-handedly massacred three hundred thousand people. This time, I'll talk about his weapon, alright?"

Ooh! His weapon!

Fan Tong's eyes brightened. Although he had already read information on the weapons belonging to Luo Yue's young emperor and Eastern City's queen countless times in his Wushu textbook, aside from the names, the information given was very general. Mi Zhong should be able to tell him a little bit more.

Although his eyes had brightened, when Fan Tong unwittingly glanced down and saw the still-sleeping mop hanging on his waist, his mood fell again.

Luo Shi had sent people to retrieve the mop from the boat and then had it delivered to Fan Tong. Puhahaha complained to him about how it had woken up and found itself alone on a boat, thinking that it had been abandoned... Due to his curse, Fan Tong could only respond with "That wasn't the case," "I was very worried that I had accidentally left you there," and other such false remarks. Even though he'd wanted to let Puhahaha know he actually didn't want it, he couldn't do anything about it. He felt truly helpless at that.

Right now, he was going to hear about the Four Stringed Sword Tian Luo Yan. Even if he was curious, he could only sigh upon hearing stories of that kind of godly weapon. After all, they would never belong to him. He was really a bit sad about that.

"Englar's weapon—Four Stringed Sword Tian Luo Yan—is said to need Shufa to activate. It is a magic blade just like Lunar Crescent Blade—Skies. When using a weapon like Tian Luo Yan, one must be familiar with its Shufa in order to draw out as much of its power as possible. With that information, Queen Xi Ying should also know how to use magic since she would need it to use Skies.

Although she has a high-level weapon, she still needs to learn many things about the enemy, which can be quite exhausting. ”

At that moment, Fan Tong was reminded of a question that he had before. Luckily, Mi Zhong started explaining before he could even ask.

“You probably think this all sounds very strange. As a matter of fact, a long time ago, Eastern City and Luo Yue seemed to have swapped their rulers’ weapons with each other. That’s why Luo Yue’s young emperor wields a weapon that has an Eastern name, while Queen Xi Ying wields a weapon that has a Western name. Tian Luo Yan and Skies are weapons that are passed onto successors by each country’s rulers. Despite that, the successors need to be strong enough to obtain the weapons’ approval. If they fail to obtain its approval, the weapons can only wait until the next ruler appears to see if they will be a suitable wielder.”

Fan Tong had originally thought that the rulers of Eastern City and Western City were both just naturally talented. He’d been under the impression that they could wield powerful weapons the minute they became rulers of their city. He’d never imagined they had to fulfill specific conditions. Even though they were rulers, it seemed they still had to spend great efforts to train.

“We have more information on Tian Luo Yan than Skies as Englar had used Tian Luo Yan in the battlefield. As for Skies, it is still a mystery to us. Our queen has never used her sword in battles. She hasn’t even worn it at her side during important occasions and celebrations. Most people have never gotten a clear glimpse of her sword, so we don’t even know its exact appearance. The best description we have on Skies is in the Wushu textbook.”

“How come you referred to it as both a ? In the end, which is it?” Fan Tong had been confused by Mi Zhong’s erratic description.

“Oh... Call it whatever you want. We’ve never seen its actual appearance after all. Since it’s called ‘Lunar Crescent Blade,’ it’s probably a long knife, right? But it could also be a sword, who knows?”

Mi Zhong didn’t seem all that interested in talking about Skies. It was probably like he’d said, there simply wasn’t enough information on Skies to talk about.

“However, Tian Luo Yan is definitely a sword. During the war five years ago, it

was Tian Luo Yan's four strings that had scared everyone out of their wits."

"Oh?"

"There's a saying we have about the four strings of Tian Luo Yan: The first string will make your heart tremble in fear. The second string will take away your will. The third string will break your body. Lastly, the fourth string will destroy your soul. This is because the Four-Stringed Sword Tian Luo Yan produces a deadly music that causes everything in its range to cower in its power. When Englar had used the third string, a whole sweep of people fell down dead. Wait, that's not right, he must have used the fourth string as well since those people never revived. Their souls had definitely all been destroyed."

It definitely sounds like a powerful weapon... Does it attack by using sound waves?

"Tian Luo Yan is a soul-purging weapon? There's no need to use the fourth string?"

His words had been flipped again. Paired with his questioning tone, his words sounded extremely strange yet again.

"That is... I'm also not too sure about this. However, it's said that Tian Luo Yan emits a brilliant light when its fourth string sounds. Perhaps its wielder can choose when to use its soul-purging ability?"

How mystical. It is indeed a godly weapon. Then, can Tian Luo Yan speak?

"Can Tian Luo Yan not speak?"

"How would I know? Due to the high synchronization rate between it and Englar, even if Tian Luo Yan can speak, the only person who could hear its voice would be Englar."

Speaking of the subject, Fan Tong remembered that his own synchronization rate with Puhahaha was quite low. He still had to speak out loud to converse with it.

His synchronization rate with the mop was low, but it wasn't a bad thing... He'd had questions about this synchronization rate ever since he had bought the mop and he still hadn't obtained answers to those questions even now.

Furthermore, how did people raise their synchronization rate with their weapons? After he knew how, should he make an effort to raise his synchronization with the mop or prevent it from becoming higher?

“Alright, I’m done talking about Tian Luo Yan. Are you satisfied?”

“That’s all?”

“Then what else do you want to hear about? Should I also talk about Qian Huan Hua and Aifroa? I’m sorry, Qian Huan Hua is the same as Skies in that our queen has never been seen wearing it. As for Aifroa... Englar hadn’t been wearing any armor that one time he came out to fight. That’s why I say he’s a monster, not a human. Everyone in the Eastern City who knows what had happened five years ago would agree with me. Perhaps even the people of Luo Yue think so as well.”

Ah, so it’s like this...

“Oh, I see someone below us. It seems to be a friend of yours, Fan Tong,” Mi Zhong said suddenly. Fan Tong looked down and saw Bi Rou standing below the city walls.

“Fan Tong, I heard you were on guard duty? Is everything going well?”

Since she said she had “heard” that he was on guard duty, then it meant she had gone to his room.

“Everything’s not going well...”

“Is it even possible for something to go wrong on guard duty? You need to take this a little more seriously.”

I’m saying that everything’s fine, really!

“I’ve already told Yue Tui and Zhu Sha about this, but I’ll tell you as well.” Bi Rou smiled brightly before continuing. “This afternoon, we’re going to go kill more chickens. That’s all, bye.”

What! What about my job? I still have guard duty this afternoon!

“How wonderful. You have a beautiful woman visiting you even while you’re working...” Mi Zhong said with an envious expression.

Wait a second, isn't Ling Shi the one you like?

"Mi Zhong, this afternoon..."

"Oh, you can skip if you want, but you won't be paid for this morning's work. Moreover, you'll leave a bad mark on your record. The next time you do a job, your supervisors will keep an eye on you.

"..."

That's... Then you guys can go kill chickens without me. Can you guys just bring back enough feathers for all of us?

©Fan Tong's Afterword

Sigh, I had thought that after the previous accidents, I'd become cautious. As long as no one deliberately tried to murder me, I wouldn't die easily...

In the end, reality turned out differently from what I've expected. Is the Eastern City just full of traps and dangerous places then? Lord Yin Shi, you're obviously very airheaded, how come you've never triggered that trap in Sheng Wang Dian and come close to death yourself?

It does seem like you've been living at Sheng Wang Dian for quite a while. To have survived for this long, then it means you've probably never triggered that trap... I never would've expected that just by looking at you. The probability of something going wrong is extremely high when it comes to you.

I am still upset that my debt had been increased by another hundred strings. Exactly what will happen from now on?

Moreover, since I have friends now, I'd expected them to come and salvage me from the pond. In the end, I still had to swim after all that fuss. The only thing that changed is that now I'm not swimming alone.

That being said, just the pain from two hundred and ninety strings of debt was enough to make my body float limply in the pond after my rebirth, making it difficult to swim. Then Mi Zhong, with his disastrous debt situation, doesn't that mean... His swimming ability must be exceptionally strong!

However, humans are easily adaptable. It's definitely possible for someone to

become skilled at swimming if they trained enough. Huh, should I make some time to practice swimming? I wonder if Yue Tui would agree to teach me, but he doesn't look like he'd be good at teaching.

I am very depressed at the moment. Why did Bi Rou tell me we're going to go kill more chickens this afternoon when I am in the middle of returning my debt? Of course, collecting the rest of the feathers I need to rise in rank is an important task, but if I go, then it'd mean this whole morning of guard duty would be wasted! Moreover, I'll also leave a bad mark on my record! I protest against this! I protest, I protest!

If I'm going to skip this afternoon's work, it'd be best if I leave now. Another minute standing here means another wasted minute. I won't get paid in any case...

Mi Zhong, did you never learn a cloning technique? Can't you make a clone of yourself and dress it up as me and help me stand guard this afternoon?

Even if you knew how to clone yourself, I know you would never use it to help me. If you could clone yourself, you'd certainly have used it before now to double your salary.

Didn't Yue Tui say that he would work with me to return my debt? When will he start working...

Next: [Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don't Be Like This, Owner! Don't Run Away!](#)

Previous: [Chapter 5: Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other's Houses](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translator: Saviesa, Nannyn

Proofreaders: PiKairi, Nannyn, Saviesa, Syrra, Dinoj

The Chinese phrase that Fan Tong uses here, “後會無期,” doesn’t translate well to English. It means “See you at some unspecified time in the distant future” or “There is no specified date for our next meeting,” which is quite rude in this context. Normally, Chinese people use “再見” to say goodbye, which means “see you again (soon).”

In chapter 5 of volume 1, it mentions how Yin Shi had partially shaved Wei Shi’s head with Shufa, so the hair growing back refers to that.

The term that Yin Shi uses here is 小白臉 (literally “little white face”), which is a derogatory term for pretty boys that can also refer to male prostitutes. It comes from 白臉, a term for (usually evil) actors in a traditional Chinese, in which the villains’ faces are often painted white.

In his descriptions, Mi Zhong sometimes refers to Skies as a 刀 (dao, a long knife or single-edged sword) and sometimes as a 劍 (jian, a double-edged sword). The character used in Skies’ name is 刃 (ren), which refers to the edge or blade of a sword, so it’s quite unclear whether Skies is a single or double-edged sword by just looking at its name.

← [Chapter 5 Friends Should Occasionally Visit Each Other’s Houses Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don’t Be Like This, Owner! Don’t Run Away!](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

23 Comments so far:

1.  *miss.rubii* says:

[July 2, 2015 at 3:52 am](#)

Wow I’m really fortunate to have found this series :) lol fan tong is really born under a unlucky star. But his misfortune is really too funny xD .

And so many mysteries. I’m gonna try naming them all from the top of my head... 1. What happened to Hui Shi? 2. What is Yue Tui ‘s connection to the West (is he the emperor?) 3. Why does Yue Tui look so much like Hui Shi (is there a connection ?)4. Why does the queen follow Wei Shi’s word ? 5. The mysterious past of Yue Tui and Yin Shi (how are they connected to the West ?) 6. Why did the weapons scream at Yue Tui and Yin Shi (Are they both too powerful like on a black tael or three gold string level, could it be bc they are both from the west , or something else?) 7. The mysteries involving the western emperor (why was he bound in chains during the war five years ago? Why does he cover his face and make no public appearance ? And is he

actually being used by his subordinates ?) 8. What happened to our rice bucket hero (why doesn't he remember how he died ? Did he die ? Also I remember in the beginning Fan Tong said he didn't know if he can keep that promise to that person ...not sure if this was actually said. Correct me if I'm wrong) 9. Is Pwahahaha actually secretly powerful (hope so :D) if not I wouldn't be surprised with out mc's non existent luck lol 10. Will Fan Tong become strong someday (hopefully soon lol). Oh my personal wish would be that he had the power of divine as his mutation in coming to this world (since he did divination in his previous world xD. Oh and Pwahahaha is actually a divine weapon that is both intelligent and a soul healer aka. Opposite of soul purging weapon . Why not ? Pwahahaha is pretty ancient and stuff. Yup these are my two wishes xD)

Here is my personal question. there are some people who mentioned that Hui Shi and Yue Tui are somehow connected (e.g they are twins) or that Yue Tui is the Western King (which I thought too). But Hui Shi is a natural resident and Yue Tui is a new resident (both my assumptions). I don't think they would accept a new resident king right ? And if you think that Yue Tui is actually a natural resident (bc we technically didn't see him revive in the pond) it fits with both cases. But then again with Yue Tui's story about being sliced and stabbed everywhere until he was murdered (assuming the story is true) and his one time nightmare, it leads you to think he is a new resident. Now my question is can a new resident really be blood related to Hui Shi (even though they look so similar) or be the western emperor ???

[Reply](#)



○ *miss.rubii* says:

[July 2, 2015 at 3:55 am](#)

wow after postig I see that what I wrote look like an essay o.o
my apologies haha

[Reply](#)



■ *dinoj* says:

[July 18, 2015 at 8:32 am](#)

Haha np! (I also feel like all my replies to everything feel like essays.. ^^;) Actually I don't think Yue Tui is a New Resident at all. I have a lot of theories none of which could be proven or rejected yet but I really think Yue Tui has a connection with the west and is quite possibly, the emperor. The missing Hui Shi could have been the one who set Yue Tui up in the Eastern City and put the brand on him before he disappear, or according to my theory, went to the west, kind of like the prince and the pauper except this is the emperor and the lord of opposing sides. That could also be the reason why Yue Tui didn't have a guide. Also, as for the torture story, he remembers it all too clearly, but most New Residents have some of their memories sealed off, maybe it was just cause my opinion is already kind of bias to my theories so I assumed that it was actually the western city's residents who tortured him.

Yue Tui is very mysterious, we learn that he can use magic when he healed Fan Tong in the previous chapters, there's also times when you can tell, he's not really there. As for the nightmare, I don't remember that part. I've meant to go back and reread everything. Anyways, just the aura? I get from Yue Tui doesn't feel New Resident. Like when Fan Tong first met him, I think I remember Fan Tong saying something along the lines of Yue Tui seemed like a pampered prince and that he didn't know how to even dress himself. Like how, Xi Ying doesn't dress herself, possibly the Western City's Emperor didn't dress himself either. Just my theories (:

[Reply](#)



2. *kiyu* says:

[July 1, 2015 at 11:23 am](#)

i really think you guys should do a joint project of this novel with some other translation group. Sorry if I sound demanding or anything but since the release is so slow, its really hard for it to be popular even though the story is awesome. Stories released faster more popularity from what I see. I mean, one complete chapter takes more than half a year...just how excruciating is that for those who love this novel. (Im so sorry but I just love this novel so much, I even bought the hard copies eventhough I dont understand a word. In fact I even thought of hiring a translator once I start working few years from now if the translation still havent finish by then lol)

[Reply](#)



3. *Lurker* says:

[June 27, 2015 at 6:19 pm](#)

I wonder when both ruler's weaponry will meet Feng Tong's weapon and also laugh,after being silence for like a few moments.

[Reply](#)



4. *Pijon* says:

[May 26, 2015 at 5:18 am](#)

Ooh, the theories for this are getting interesting! In addition, there's something funny going on with the names-mainly "Yue Tui" and "Hui Shi"- as I've come to understand it, "shi" desognates a high ranking Easterner and "yue" as a high ranking Westerner. Remove the titles and they are Hui and Tui (which seem similar "twin-like" names to me) Problem is, isn't Hui Shi said to be older than Yue Tui?

Also, there are a lot of suspicious occurances. Yin Shi and Yue Tui both can't hold talking weapons, but that's not all they have in common. Both are the victims of a mysterious dark past, are extremely talented and powerful in their craft, have ambiguous connections to the West, and they both know

more than they like to admit. Both are also sketchy when it comes to Hui Shi. I believe that Yin Shi knows what's going on. He's very protective of Luo Shi, but he doesn't seem to get along with the rest. It seems like one of our characters is a spy. I can't say who, but I like to think Yue Tui is somewhat innocent and was roped into this mess. Hui Shi is a big red flag-but Yin Shi gives off a more threatening vibe. I feel like he'll be an important figure, either changing the Eastern's system of government or tipping the scales of war by bringing one side close to victory. At least, that's my speculation. I have high hopes for this story!

[Reply](#)

o  *dinoj* says:

[June 15, 2015 at 9:08 am](#)

I didn't notice how similar Hui and Tui is :O that's very interesting. As for the age difference, it might be possible for them to be older than how they look since we know that Yin Shi and Ling Shi must be really old since they were mentioned to have watched Xi Ying grow up. Also, Xi Ying is Luo Shi's mom and Luo Shi is pretty big so she can't be that young, but all three of them I think were mentioned to be really good-looking and not old. We also never learned Hui Shi and Yue Tui's ages and it has also been mentioned that Yue Tui looks very much like Hui Shi if I'm not mistaken. So I feel like it's highly possible for them to be twins. Also did western city's king show up to the festival? I think I remembered him showing up but with a veil covering his face. That's could be that he was hiding his face.

As for Yin Shi being a spy. That's highly possible but wasn't he fighting against the westerners before and that's when he met Xiao Rou? I kind of really hope he isn't one:/ but the fact that Ling Shi asked if he wasn't.. that scares me. Even Ling Shi didn't seem sure :(

[Reply](#)



5. *hana* says:

[April 25, 2015 at 3:34 pm](#)

I heard theres no proofreader for this novel? Why dont you guys posts the non proofread one in google doc and people help proofread while enjoy reading the chapter as well? Just a suggestion cause my friend does that.

[Reply](#)

o *Nannyn* says:

[April 27, 2015 at 5:41 pm](#)

We actually have enough proofreaders for this series, it's just the translating that's behind. The series that we need proofreaders for is Gong Hua. The google doc suggestion is pretty good, we'll look into it! :)

[Reply](#)



6. *lirg123* says:

[April 13, 2015 at 12:43 am](#)

Just seal the pond in eternal frost.

[Reply](#)



7. *Anonymous* says:

[April 12, 2015 at 8:41 pm](#)

Is there a place where we can get raws?

[Reply](#)

○ *PiKairi* says:

[May 25, 2015 at 6:01 am](#)

Unfortunately, not in text form you can easily put into google translate. It isn't free either but you can find images on LCRead.

[Reply](#)



8. *Amiric* says:

[April 2, 2015 at 5:47 pm](#)

No wonder everyone hate Wei Shi. I don't really understand the queen's indifference. Were New Residents play a part in Hui Shi's disappearance? p/s : Thanks for the translation :)

[Reply](#)



9. *dinoj* says:

[April 2, 2015 at 8:49 am](#)

Luo shi is so lovable >< I truly wonder what xi ying is thinking :\ thanks for the update(:

[Reply](#)



10. *Delly* says:

[February 18, 2015 at 6:29 am](#)

Thank's so much.....

[Reply](#)

11.  *hana* says:

[February 17, 2015 at 4:43 pm](#)

this is the day my dream come true...fast update of KSM....THANK YOU SO MUCH PLEASE MARRY ME DEAR TRANSLATORS (im a girl tho) lol

[Reply](#)

o  *PiKairi* says:

[May 25, 2015 at 6:00 am](#)

LOL. Too bad I'm only a proofer~ Ahh.... that cracked me up. Thank you for your enthusiasm though XD

[Reply](#)

12.  *Analyse_this* says:

[February 4, 2015 at 4:40 am](#)

Hahahaha... Its just one thing after another. Poor Fang Tong. Yue Tui and Luo Shi are awesome friends. Awesome but clumsy friends :p
Thanks for the translations..

[Reply](#)

13.  *the Da* says:

[February 3, 2015 at 12:49 pm](#)

bwahahahahaha!!!! Fang Tong, I'm so sorry, but I couldn't help but laughing at your misfortune! wahahahaha! Thank you for the translation!

[Reply](#)

14.  *dinoj* says:

[February 2, 2015 at 8:48 am](#)

Hahahaha this is too funny xD thanks for the translation! I'm curious as to when they'll realize fan tong is naked xD xiao luo shi is so cute>< and yue tui I feel like he and Hui shi switched positions? And that yue tui is possibly the western city's king! But now hui shi is acting as their king like the prince and the pauper! But that's just a theory :P

[Reply](#)

○  *PiKairi* says:

[February 15, 2015 at 6:45 pm](#)

Ah. That's a really interesting theory. What would keep Hui Shi there though?

[Reply](#)

■  *dinoj* says:

[February 16, 2015 at 9:49 am](#)

Haha that's a good question:O hmm could it be that they didn't intentionally switch but then yue tui's description of his death is really very mysterious so I want to say that yue tui ran away and Hui shi was just at the wrong place at the wrong time and got dragged to the west and couldn't escape cause there's just too many guards and if taking into account yue tui's death description then guards are pretty damn strong if theory is correct which it doesn't seem as likely:/ or could yue tui and Hui shi possibly be twins and Hui shi being the wonderful person he seemed to be, found out about his long lost twin yue tui and felt bad for yue tui and how his own people wanted to kill him(not sure if that's right) so Hui shi traded

spots with yue tui to end his suffering. Haha just another theory.

[Reply](#)

○ *yenna* says:

[April 3, 2015 at 3:59 am](#)

i think i can actually believe that.

[Reply](#)

Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don't Be Like This, Owner! Don't Run Away!

On August 15, 2015, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao](#), [novels](#), [shuiquan](#) , With [10 Comments](#)

“Little kitten, little kitten...” —Yin Shi

“We came here to kill chickens.” —Ling Shi

“Don't come here again! Aren't you guys going overboard?” —Land chickens and all the other creatures

The reason they were going to kill more chickens was so they could rise in rank and receive a salary. In the end, Fan Tong decided to skip out on the afternoon's work and returned to the dorms where Yue Tui and Zhu Sha were waiting so they could go to the agreed meeting place together.

They had originally arranged to meet in front of the dormitory gate; however, they later changed the meeting place to “a secret corner in the southeast, outside the city walls.” This was because the moment Ling Shi heard that Yin Shi was going to take them to kill chickens again, he decided to join in on the fun since he was free and had nothing better to do. After he heard that they were meeting in front of the dormitory gate, he said one sentence:

“If you think it's okay for everyone to see us meeting up and leaving the city together, then it's fine by me.”

Right—

Fan Tong broke out in cold sweat at the thought. He strongly advocated to those who weren't yet aware of the crisis that they switch to a more remote meeting place in order to avoid the public's eyes. There was already gossip about their relationships with Luo Shi and Yin Shi. If they were to be seen together with Ling Shi, they might not be able to walk away unscathed.

Moreover, Ling Shi was popular among men. He was different from Luo Shi

and Yin Shi in that his supporters were the most fanatical out of the three. While Fan Tong knew that a crowd of fanatical women was frightening, a crowd of fanatical men was even more terrifying. He didn't want to go through that sort of experience. Mi Zhong's obsession was at least in the acceptable range. If an even more serious pervert were to appear, he certainly wouldn't be able to bear it.

After they arrived at the meeting place, Ling Shi arrived promptly. Yin Shi on the other hand, still hadn't shown up even though it was past their meeting time. They only heard the sound of his voice through the Fuzhou communication charms when they turned on the group chat. It sounded like he was very busy.

“Ah! Wait for me a little longer! Wait for me... Aaaah! Don't come looking for a duel with me at a time like this! Xiao Rou! Wait for me! Give me two seconds to deal with him! Don't block my way again! I'm in a hurry! Don't come looking for a duel with me again... Don't line up!”

It seemed that Yin Shi had been stopped by various people after leaving Shen Wang Dian. Moreover, it seemed like these people's main goal was to have a duel with him. All sorts of noises drifted out of the Fuzhou communication charms. They could hear Yin Shi using various methods to break free from these troublesome people.

“I told you to come over earlier, but you just wouldn't listen...” Ling Shi sighed as he listened to the noise on Yin Shi's side. If a lower-ranked person demanded a duel with a higher-ranked person, the higher-ranked person could not refuse. Refusing was tantamount to losing and the higher-ranked person would be directly demoted a rank, which was why Yin Shi was so distressed. It would be quite funny if Yin Shi was forced to use a restriction seal just to break away from the crowd.

“Oh... Yin Shi, you can take your time. It doesn't matter.” Bi Rou's voice sounded extremely tender over the communication charm, but the people who could see her expression clearly knew that “it did matter” after all.

“How could there be so many people looking for a duel with him?” Zhu Sha was bewildered. After all, Yin Shi held a pure black tassel, so everyone knew to keep their distance from him. Those people wouldn't be as stupid as to

knowingly head into their death, right?

Hearing his question, Ling Shi explained, “It’s because his appearance makes it seem like he’s not particularly difficult to deal with. Even though he has a pure black tassel, many people would feel an itch to fight just upon looking at him. They think that it’s because of his status as an attendant that he’s pretending to be stronger than he is by wearing a black tassel. Usually, finding him for a duel isn’t easy at all, which is why he is continuously intercepted whenever he walks on the streets in public.

Lord Ling Shi, you missed a reason. When men see another man who is more handsome than they are, they will want to beat that man up. Don’t overlook this just because you are as beautiful as a flower and no men would ever be against you.

“Eh? So he didn’t get a pure black tassel just because he’s an attendant?”

Zhu Sha, you are truly too rude. How could you say that out loud?

“Of course not. The Eastern City is unlikely to issue the wrong tassels. A pure black tassel also has a further significance that you all probably haven’t taken note of.” Ling Shi paused at that moment and took in everyone’s doubtful expressions. He then continued, “The fact that he’s still holding a pure black tassel means that he’s never lost a duel.”

Oh... That makes sense! So Lord Yin Shi really is strong? But last time, it didn’t really seem like it... And Bi Rou, what is going on with that blatantly worshipping expression of yours?

“Does Lord Yin Shi rarely go out? I’ve heard that he’s very in touch with the people and loves to have fun.”

If even Yue Tui has heard about it, then it should be something everyone knows.

“He often goes out, but he’s usually riding his uncontrollable moshou. Nobody wants to get close to him while he’s riding that moshou.”

That makes sense. Before they could get close to him, they’d be trampled to death by that moshou. Nobody would want that to happen.

But if people have seen him ride that moshou, wouldn't they think that he's quite strong and give up on dueling him? Besides, he should've had duels with many people by now. There should've been many spectators watching these duels on the streets as well. Shouldn't rumors of his true strength spread by now?

Although the people who've lost might not want to speak of it and would rather watch others suffer like them, there are still spectators who could spread the news. Though it is possible that people just aren't convinced by those news at all...

"Then who is stronger between Lord Yin Shi and Her Majesty the Queen?" Cute Girl A asked curiously. It was quite normal to compare Yin Shi to the queen, as they were the only two people in the city who held pure black tassels.

"They've never fought," Ling Shi answered simply, as if he didn't want to go into detail on the topic.

"Eh? So you aren't interested in finding out who's stronger?" Cute Girl A asked another question, having not read the atmosphere.

"He can't possibly raise a hand against Ying, so dueling her is out of the question. If he ever dares, I would get rid of him personally."

Huh? But Lord Ling Shi, aren't you carrying a pale black tassel... You shouldn't be able to defeat him, right?

"Then who's more powerful between Lord Ling Shi and Lord Yin Shi?" Cute Girl A seemed rather fond of this kind of question, so much that Fan Tong wanted to break out in cold sweat on her behalf.

"He would be more powerful than me in a direct fight. However, there are many ways I can get rid of him."

In other words, Lord Ling Shi, you're more sinister...

"Ah! Just now, my hand slipped and I accidentally cut off someone's hand... So unlucky! My luck doesn't seem to be very good today. Someone must have cursed me, right?"

"I'm the one who cursed you. I'll admit it. Are you satisfied?" Ling Shi replied

unhappily.

“It was me! Yin Shi, you big idiot! You didn’t come to keep me company. Even though we’ve arranged to meet, I can’t believe you’re late!” Bi Rou suddenly said in an offended voice, sounding somewhat bitter.

So nowadays people are even fighting to be recognized for cursing someone?

“Ah! Are you angry?” Yin Shi’s voice sounded a bit panicky. A shrill cry of pain suddenly erupted from the communication charms. Perhaps his hand had slipped and injured someone again?

“No, I’m not angry,” Bi Rou conceded, pursing her lips. After a moment, she spoke as if on the verge of tears, “On our first date, we killed chickens. Now on our second date, we are going to kill chickens again. Even though the dates haven’t been especially romantic, I was really looking forward to seeing you again. You clearly said that you missed me, but that’s not the same as making time for me... I know you’ve known the citizens of Eastern City for a lot longer than you’ve known me, so it’s natural that you would make time for them. I’m not particularly special in any case...”

Wow, every word stabbed him where it hurts. Weren’t the two of you quite sweet with each other before? Why does it sound like you two have a lot of problems instead? Bi Rou, do you want to add the fact that there have been a bunch of third wheels around you every time you went on a date to that pile of problems? That being said, does this mean that Yin Shi has never taken you out on a date with just the two of you? That’s really slow...

“Ah!” Yin Shi cried out in alarm, but he didn’t try to placate Bi Rou. Just when Fan Tong thought they were going to break up, Yin Shi’s figure suddenly appeared in front of their eyes. “Xiao Rou, don’t be angry, I—”

“I want to go back to the Western City!”

Eh? What? What did I just hear?

“Aaaaaah! Don’t leave! I’ll be lonely! Old man! Quickly help me come up with something to say!” Flustered, Yin Shi turned to Ling Shi for help. Ling Shi looked at him skeptically.

“You came over here directly? What about the duels?”

“Eh? Xiao Rou is angry, why would I pay any more attention to them? I knocked them all to the ground in one move and came over here.”

Oh... You knocked them to the ground, or did you send them to the Rebirth Pond? Were there any Natural Residents among them?

Sure enough, women are people you should avoid provoking the most in the world. If a woman is angry, then terrible things will happen.

“...” Ling Shi was quiet, evidently feeling helpless in this situation, but it didn’t seem like he was observing a moment of silence for the victims of Yin Shi’s attack. Ling Shi didn’t empathize unnecessarily with other people’s misfortunes, especially when they were strangers.

“The Western City?” At last someone raised this question. The person who had spoken was Zhu Sha, but he wasn’t the only person who was curious at the sudden mention of the city’s name.

“Ah.” Yin Shi finally discovered that Bi Rou had said something she shouldn’t have, but he didn’t seem to particularly care.

Fan Tong truly hoped Yin Shi didn’t care. If by any chance he did care... Then wouldn’t everyone present be killed in order to keep Bi Rou’s secret? Since ancient times, people who had chanced upon someone’s secret never met good endings.

“I’m originally from the Western City. I came to the Eastern City in order to find Yin Shi,” Bi Rou explained in a relaxed manner. It seemed she didn’t mind that her secret had been exposed, but was that really something she should’ve said in public?

“Why did you come here to find Lord Yin Shi?” Yue Tui immediately asked.

Upon hearing his question, Bi Rou blushed, seeming to have already forgotten her unhappiness from a few moments ago. She also seemed to have become enveloped in a pink cloud of infatuation. “Because...because, I fell in love with him at first sight. He was just so charming. I simply wanted to get closer to him. But if I stayed in the Western City, then we would always be enemies and I would only be able to watch him from afar. I was unsatisfied with that, so I came to the Eastern City with the small hope of catching his attention.”

Miss, weren't you just making noise about how you wanted to go back to the Western City? How come you've already forgotten your anger and now love him to death again?

"Yin Shi is childish, so he'll certainly pay attention to you," Ling Shi commented. He hadn't meant to dampen her enthusiasm with those words; he had merely been stating a fact.

"That is fine by me. I'm happy as long as I'm able to stay with him forever."

And you're unhappy when you're not together, is that it? If you're demanding him to stay with you every minute and second of your life, then I'm afraid that's really impossible...

"Xiao Rou, I'm sorry. You specifically came to the Eastern City to play with me, but I haven't made time to keep you company." Yin Shi gripped Bi Rou's hands and looked at her sincerely, searching for her forgiveness.

"I-I'm not angry. I'm happy as long as I get to see you." Finding herself within such a close range of Yin Shi's face, Bi Rou's entire face turned red. Yin Shi's words felled her in one strike. She was so overwhelmed that she nearly fainted.

In the end, Yin Shi and Bi Rou resolved their conflict in such an easy manner. By the side, Fan Tong noticed that Yue Tui's expression had turned cold. Maybe he was just seeing things?

"Let's ignore the topic of the Western City for a moment. Exactly what have you dressed yourself in?" Ling Shi's face twitched as he asked Yin Shi this question. At that moment, everyone finally noticed Yin Shi's outfit. He was wearing something that resembled military armor. The broken knife he had bought before was hanging from his waist in a sheath. All of a sudden, he truly resembled a soldier; however, wasn't he the rector of Shufa Xuan?

"Ah, this, didn't I say that I was going to wear it for you all to see? It's the new toy that I bought."

A shadow fell over Ling Shi's face at Yin Shi's answer. Yin Shi had indeed mentioned that he bought armor along with a weapon and that he would show them off sometime in the future... It seemed like he decided to carry out his words today.

“Does he plan on using that armor as an ornament...” Zhu Sha mumbled to himself, nearly speechless.

“Xiao Rou, does it look good?” Wearing his new outfit, Yin Shi naturally wanted to know the opinion of the person he cared about the most. Hearing his question, Bi Rou nodded fiercely in response.

“Yes! You look handsome in whatever you wear! You look especially manly in this outfit—”

Bi Rou, you truly can't be saved anymore. You've reached the final stage of "Yin Shi-itis." No medicine can cure you of this disease...

“Ah, in fact, I thought about buying a mask to wear, but I don't know how it would look along with the rest of my outfit. I do think it would be an interesting combination. There was this demon mask with protruding teeth that someone was selling last time.”

Please don't. Your biggest selling point is that face of yours, but now you say you want to cover it up? Please have a little self-awareness.

After hearing Yin Shi's exuberant words, Bi Rou's expression became rather forced. It seemed like she was trying very hard to find a way to tactfully persuade him to give up on buying a mask. If that handsome face that she loved so much was concealed by a ridiculous mask, then her happiness would decrease every time they saw each other... If she told Yin Shi that it would make her unhappy, he should at least be able to understand.

“Yin Shi, you look fine just like this. A mask... A mask... Please don't, just thinking about it makes me unhappy...”

“Ah, you wouldn't like it? Then forget it, I won't wear one.” Yin Shi quickly gave up on the idea. Sure enough, Bi Rou's words were effective; compared to Ling Shi, it was much easier for her to make Yin Shi listen.

“You've worn this armor before. I'd like to trouble you to improve your memory a bit,” Ling Shi said in a long-suffering tone, one hand supporting his forehead.

Yin Shi looked at him, puzzled. “Huh? When?”

“Chen Yue Jie, Judgment Day... And more, forget it, I don’t want to talk to you.”

Eh? He was wearing armor on Chen Yue Jie?

Fan Tong admitted that when he looked at the carriage, he had only payed attention to Yin Shi’s face and not to what he was wearing.

In the end, why does a rector of Shufa Xuan like wearing armor so much?

“We’ve delayed for quite a while. Let’s go...” Ling Shi already felt disinclined to say anything more to Yin Shi. Since the last person was here, they should be able to set off, right?

“Ah, Ling Shi, since you came along, we can go to Void Space 2. Let’s go.”

“We’re going to kill chickens! Where in Void Space 2 can you find any chickens?! Clear your head a little!” Unable to bear it anymore, Lin Shi finally shouted at Yin Shi. If it were possible, Ling Shi probably would’ve wanted to twist Yin Shi’s ear and teach him a lesson, but he didn’t do any such thing in the end.

“Chickens...? Huh? I only came here to have a date with Xiao Rou. But killing chicken is fine too, I’ll do whatever Xiao Rou wants to do.”

After Yin Shi spoke in a puzzled voice, everyone turned their focus onto Bi Rou.

So in the end, what did you invite us here for? Does this count as a dating scam?

“We killed seven hundred and twenty-three chickens last time, so we only need to kill four hundred and seventy-seven chickens this time.” Ling Shi’s memory was exceptional; he even recalled the exact number of chickens they had killed last time.

However, since Ling Shi specifically remembered this kind of thing, it seems like he’s hoping we won’t kill any more chickens than necessary. He probably feels that killing too many is the same as killing too few. In addition, according to his logic from last time, since everyone has already collected enough chicken skins and only needs the feathers now, he should get to walk away with all of the chicken skins from this trip, right?

“Yes, Ling Shi Gege was awesome last time. He felled a whole sweep of chickens with just one move and managed to kill more than seven hundred of them before seven o’clock. He was so cool and handsome,” Bi Rou praised.

Ling Shi smiled at her in response. Even though Fan Tong didn’t want to admit it, Ling Shi’s smile was truly magnificent. His smiling face could put other women’s beauty to shame. But Bi Rou had an edge on him with her sweet and pleasant demeanor. Comparing the two would be like comparing apples to oranges.

“Ling Shi Gege?” It seemed that today was the first time Yin Shi had heard that term. After repeating it again in an astonished voice, he immediately used a “this is unacceptable” gaze to look at Ling Shi. “Damn old man! Don’t seduce my Xiao Rou! What nerve you have to make her call you gege!”

“I think it sounds nice and she calls me that willingly. How does that have anything to do with you?” Ling Shi replied coolly, as if determined to make Yin Shi jealous.

“Xiao Rou, don’t let him deceive you! He’s nothing more than a damn old man!” Yin Shi couldn’t do anything about Ling Shi, so he turned around to persuade Bi Rou.

Bi Rou widened her eyes innocently and looked at him with an oblivious expression. “But I’m already used to calling him that.”

No man would ever want his own lover to be close to another man; even if that other man strongly resembles a woman.

“If you’re dissatisfied with this, you can ask her if she’s willing to call you by a more intimate name.” Ling Shi was still making cynical remarks. He then proceeded to make some suggestions. “Something like... ? ? ?”

No one commented on those suggestions. Fan Tong also thought Ling Shi was going a bit overboard. If Bi Rou truly started calling Yin Shi by those nicknames, then Fan Tong felt he should probably withdraw from this chicken-killing group to prevent damage to his mind and body.

Moreover, Lord Ling Shi, those nicknames came out of your mouth first. Isn’t that inappropriate? You’re making us shudder in discomfort...

“No! Yin Shi is Yin Shi, I’m used to calling him that.”

“Ah!” Yin Shi became depressed at Bi Rou’s refusal.

Lord Yin Shi, you weren’t seriously considering being called by those nicknames, right? Are your preferences really that unusual?

“Xiao Rou...”

“Hmm?”

“That damn old man kills chickens really fast, do you like that?”

“Of course I like it. It makes me happy.”

Yin Shi suffered a blow when he heard Bi Rou’s affirmation.

“I’m capable of doing it too! Damn it! Old man, I’ll be killing the chickens this time. You can just wait by the sidelines. You don’t need to do anything!”

“Do you want to display your masculinity? Do as you please. It doesn’t matter to me.”

Yin Shi is going to kill all the chickens this time?

Fan Tong was worried. Yin Shi gave him an unreliable feeling. If it were possible, he’d rather follow Ling Shi as it would make him more at ease.

“But old man! If you aren’t going to kill any chickens, what are you going to do?”

“... You’re the one who doesn’t want me killing chickens.”

Sure enough, Yin Shi was pretty special to be able to go back on his own words in such a short period of time.

“Ah! Forget it. Let’s go.”

“Resource Area 2 isn’t that far away. If we are going over there as a group, wouldn’t it be better to walk?”

“What roads do we take to Resource Area 2? In the end, where exactly are the chickens?”

Yin Shi was evidently unfamiliar with the roads.

“This is troublesome! Write a transfer spell for me, old man.”

“ ... ”

Internally, everyone was probably thinking along the lines of “can’t you write one yourself?” But as it was a negotiation between Ling Shi and Yin Shi, they didn’t have the right to cut in.

At Yin Shi’s rude demand, Ling Shi used a transportation spell and brought everyone to Resource Area 2. Fan Tong thought that Ling Shi would deliberately leave Yin Shi behind during the transfer, but nothing of the sort happened. After seeing Ling Shi use a transportation spell of such a scale, Fan Tong suddenly realized that Ling Shi was quite skilled at Shufa. There was nothing strange about this after thinking for a bit. After all, people didn’t necessarily have to focus on one specific subject. In fact, Fuzhou and Shufa were somewhat similar to each other. That being said, could Yin Shi also use Fuzhou?

Upon thinking that Fuzhou and Shufa were rather similar, Fan Tong became disheartened. His Fuzhou ability was fine except for his tendency of reading the incantations wrong. On the other hand, he had been declared hopeless in Shufa. The huge disparity between the subjects made him want to cry. Unfortunately, there was nothing he could do about it.

“Ah! Is this Resource Area 2? It looks quite similar to Void Space Area 2.” Yin Shi commented after taking a glance at the area. Ling Shi, the only other person present who had been to Void Space Area 2 before, unhesitatingly refuted him.

“They aren’t the same at all! Even if you disregard the aesthetics of the place, they are still very different. Don’t tell me you’re colorblind too?”

I think it’s very possible that Yin Shi has all sorts of defects and problems. More like, it would make perfect sense for him to have them.

“Huh? Is that so? But they both have beautiful skies. Look, Xiao Rou, the weather is beautiful today.”

“It is with you here.”

“ ... ”

The lovers basked in their aura of love and seemed to have completely forgotten the existence of the rest of the group. Fan Tong thought that as long as Yin Shi was here, everything would appear beautiful to Bi Rou.

In that case, when Yin Shi is around, do even the bystanders like us look good in Bi Rou's eyes? Does this count as a good thing?

"Yin, where are the things that I requested you to bring? Take them out."

At Ling Shi's abrupt words, Fan Tong was filled with expectation.

Are they going to gift us something else this time? What kind of amazing thing would it be?

"Those things..." Yin Shi looked towards Ling Shi and bowed his head in thought, earnestly pondering on the latter's words.

"Fuzhou paper! Don't tell me you didn't bring any?"

Eh? It's just Fuzhou paper? Fan Tong was disappointed.

"Ah! Fuzhou paper! It's all your fault. I went out on the streets in order to buy Fuzhou paper for you and got surrounded by people wanting a duel with me. They made me late and in turn made Xiao Rou unhappy."

What a complicated cause-and-effect scenario!

"That's not important. I thought you had some Fuzhou paper on hand, that's why I told you to bring some with you. I didn't expect that you would have to go out and buy some... Anyways, there's no point in dwelling on things that have already happened. So did you buy any in the end? If you brought them with you, distribute them among the others. They should've learned a bit Fuzhou by now. If we come across an emergency, it'd be useful for them to have some Fuzhou paper to use."

Lord Ling Shi, you're truly considerate. But I can't read Fuzhou out loud, what am I going to do...

"Yes, I bought some. I'll hand them out."

From somewhere on his person, Yin Shi pulled out a stack of different-colored Fuzhou paper. Everyone was amazed at the sight as his clothes didn't have any visible pockets. Yin Shi then randomly divided the stack of Fuzhou paper into irregular piles and handed them to everyone. Afterwards, he handed the leftover stack in his hands to Ling Shi.

"...What are you giving me Fuzhou paper for? Don't you know that I don't need

it to cast Fuzhou? Moreover, you just gave them the high-level Fuzhou paper they can't use and the low-level Fuzhou paper to me. What were you thinking? Did you even use your brain when you bought the paper? Or did your brain just never develop?"

"Hey Ling Shi, look at the sky. That cloud is beautiful."

"Don't watch the sky anymore!"

Yes! Lord Yin Shi, those woman-deceiving lines of yours won't fool Lord Ling Shi. Although you probably aren't deliberately acting stupid, you still give others the impression that you're insincere.

Ling Shi divided the low-level Fuzhou paper that he had been handed into equal stacks and distributed them among everyone. He didn't feel inclined to retrieve the high-level Fuzhou paper as he regarded it as something they could use later. Hence, everyone stored the papers away for future use.

"Alright! Let's go kill chickens." Yin Shi appeared high-spirited, but after looking at the living creatures around them, he once again looked suspiciously at Ling Shi.

"Ling Shi, which ones are chickens?"

Didn't you kill a chicken last time? Even though you only killed one, you still killed a chicken! Shouldn't it be impossible for you to not know that the thing you killed was a land chicken?

"Can't you just annihilate every living creature in sight?" Ling Shi answered indifferently.

If you're going to completely annihilate everything in sight, I'd recommend you use one of your jade plates to set up a restriction order and drive the other people out of Resource Area 2. Otherwise, it wouldn't be good if you accidentally killed someone...

"Eh? But I don't like to kill for no reason..." Yin Shi said, seemingly unwilling to do so. Everyone didn't expect his personality to be so fond of peace.

Then don't randomly ride a Moshou and trample people to death, you hateful person. Fan Tong cried out in his heart.

“You plan to kill chickens when they’re among a bunch of other beasts? Even if you really manage to do so, how will you get close enough to pluck their feathers after you’ve killed them? Won’t the animals beside them get to them first? Killing all of them would be much more simple.” Ling Shi was truly someone who would use the most efficient way to carry out a task. Moreover, it seemed like he could discard his conscience, morality, feelings, and the like to do so.

“Ah, alright, even though listening to an old man puts me in a bad mood...”

Right after they had finished speaking and were about to start doing something productive, Yue Tui couldn’t help but bring up the question that Fan Tong had also been thinking of before. “Are you... going to ask the other people in the vicinity to leave first?”

Yue Tui probably also thought that this kind of indiscriminate attack would be as dangerous as the one before. After he brought this up, Yin Shi blinked, and Ling Shi indifferently gave an answer.

“If a lord kills someone, he doesn’t need to take the blame for it, and no one will look into the incident.”

...

So... Because your special privileges make things convenient, you feel that killing people doesn’t even matter...? Isn’t this system overstepping the limits of being biased?

“Old man, you indiscriminately kill the Western City’s people, and now you won’t even let the Eastern City’s people escape?” It seemed that Yin Shi could no longer put up with this uncaring attitude towards people’s lives. Ling Shi’s following answer couldn’t force a smile out of anyone.

“It’s you who’s doing the killing, not me, you told me not to do anything.”

What truly wonderful logic. Since Yin Shi is doing the killing, you’re indifferent, is that what you mean? But if you were in his place, I’m afraid you would have even fewer qualms...?

“Damn old man! Bad old man! Hurry and use your waist pad to make the other people leave, I don’t want to kill anyone!”

“How many times have I told you that it’s not a waist pad...”

Anyway, with Ling Shi utilizing his jade plate, they all felt more at ease than they would have if Yin Shi had used his. Overall, Fan Tong felt that Yin Shi’s restriction orders couldn’t help but have some flaws. After the flaw makes an appearance, the victim wouldn’t be able to make heads or tails of the situation that would emerge – for example, Fan Tong, who had been the victim last time.

Just like he had before, Ling Shi took his blue-black jade plate, tossed it straight up, and the sigil of his restriction order formed in the sky. “Charm of Ling Shi, restriction order, boundary: Resource Area 2. Besides the people I’m looking at right now, everyone else must leave this area within ten minutes. This restriction will automatically lift after I leave.”

Fan Tong also noted that while the restriction order was in effect, the shadow of the restriction’s sigil would be visible in the sky. After they leave, it would disappear, and the other people would probably return.

However, the restriction this time... Lord Ling Shi, I’m asking you a thousand times not to leave me out. Please, please pay attention to my existence; don’t make me into a pathetic victim in ten minutes’ time...

“Alright, now I’ll start killing chickens!” Once again filled with fighting spirit, Yin Shi pointed at an area in front of him. At long last, he finally began unhesitatingly moved towards a group of beasts. Fan Tong originally expected to see him have some sort of accident and return to them embarrassed; fortunately, he was disappointed.

Yin Shi approached the group of beasts. Soon after that they immediately heard the sound of an explosion that was accompanied by a dazzling flash of light. In less than five seconds, the beasts all became corpses. As it turned out, his pure black tassel wasn’t fake... No, actually that is not necessarily true. A red tassel would probably be enough to deal with the monsters in Resource Area 2.

In short, Fan Tong’s heart didn’t want to admit that Yin Shi was strong. He felt that this strength to intelligence ratio was difficult to accept. Contrary to what he had expected, Yin Shi could still chatter annoyingly and it seemed that his long knife was just for show, since he hadn’t even unsheathed it.

“That group of beasts didn’t even include half a chicken.” Zhu Sha pointed out a fact that no one else knew how to say.

“Yin! How could you use magic?” Ling Shi’s face twisted once again. Using magic in front of the Eastern City’s inhabitants was indeed scandalous, but if he hadn’t said anything, none of them would have known it was magic.

“Eh? Yin Shi, how come you know magic?” Bi Rou had originally come from the Western City, so she could also tell that he used magic, which wasn’t the same as the Eastern City’s Shufa.

Yes, Lord Yin Shi, where did you steal this knowledge from? You also shouldn’t know how to use the Western City’s curses, right?

“Ah, Yin Shi, you can’t use magic to fry them, you’ll also fry their feathers, then we won’t be able to pluck them—”

Bi Rou recalled this point and hurriedly yelled at Yin Shi, who was already quite a distance away.

“Use the Communication Charm! That idiot only knows how to charge straight ahead and doesn’t know how to take care of anyone...”

Ling Shi continued to shake his head as he sighed. He saw it very clearly. After killing the first pack of beasts, Yin Shi used his own speed magic and floated off to kill the second crowd, murdering more along the way. He hadn’t stopped to listen to anything the others were yelling at him. His feet were never in one place, even as he killed.

That made the current situation such that they couldn’t even catch up with picking up the corpses. It wasn’t a good time to start chatting, but everyone was hesitant to straight up go and stop Yin Shi in what he was doing. Anyhow, the group started following the trail of death Yin Shi left behind and began plucking the feathers.

Fan Tong thought about how he had a weapon himself, but he still couldn’t pull it out to pluck or skin the chickens. He couldn’t help but feel depressed again. Who told him to get a weapon that was a mop?

As for Yin Shi’s trail of death... Honestly, It was haphazard and chaotic. Fan Tong couldn’t tell if the man had any sense of direction. The layout of the

corpses' placement made others feel that Yin Shi just liked to change directions whenever he felt like it. Also, the crew had already been speedily following along, but all they could see ahead was still more corpses and no sign of Yin Shi.

Thankfully, only a small portion of the feathers were damaged. Most feathers on the chickens' heads were still good enough for collecting. Otherwise, they would have been killed for nothing.

The living beings from Resource Area 2 wouldn't go extinct now, will they? Fan Tong suddenly had such a worry.

"Where did he run off to? If we don't stop him, he wouldn't know to stop... ah!"

Ling Shi was talking to himself mid-sentence when he saw something was off out in the distance. A burst of sandstorm seemed to be heading straight in their direction at maximum speed. From far away, it didn't look too threatening, however, judging from Ling Shi's expression, it couldn't have been anything simple.

"Yin! Come back!" It's the blue windstorm!"

The ? What is that? An animal? Can I eat it?

"Huh? What are you-! Ahhh! Where are you all? Ah! Take care of Xiao Rou for me. Xiao Rou can't die! She's a Natural Resident..."

Hearing Yin Shi, Ling Shi dashed toward Bi Rou and the other two girls to protect them. Because everyone was scrambling to collect feathers, everyone's positions were quite scattered. He couldn't protect everyone, so he had to make a decision.

Eh? Wait! So this is something that would cause death upon encounter? Wait a minute! Lord Ling Shi, are you just going to abandon us like this? Even though New Residents don't fear death, you shouldn't act that way. At least tell me whether or not you'll pay for the new body—!

When the gust of blue sand blasted at them, Fan Tong felt a strong force crashing onto his body, and he got swept inside...

"Xiao Rou! Ling Shi! Where are you?"

“I used Fuzhou and took them away. As for the other three...”

“Ah! What about the other three? Are they okay?”

“I’m with Zhu Sha...”

Hearing Yin Shi’s question, Yue Tui lowered his voice to answer through the Communication Charm. At the same time, he looked at the displeased Zhu Sha who was stuck on the tree with him, along with the dangerous beasts underneath that had yet to notice them.

“I don’t know where we are right now, but we ended up on top of a tree. There’s some wild beasts below us. I think it’s better to not alarm them...”

“You two are alright? The blue windstorm not only takes people off to a random location, it’s still pretty destructive by nature.”

Ling Shi was a bit doubtful. Yue Tui responded softly.

“Both Zhu Sha and I are fine. Maybe we were lucky.”

“Is that so? That’s good...”

“What about Fan Tong? We haven’t heard from him. He didn’t die, did he?”

Bi Rou’s worriedly voiced from the Communication Charm.

“If everyone is fine and he was the only one that died, that would be really unlucky.”

Ling Shi’s tone of voice still did not have an ounce of sympathy in it.

“Ah, you guys don’t move. We’ll go find you.”

“Okay, thank you.”

Yue Tui answered calmly and then stopped talking. He turned to face Zhu Sha who was really close to him.

“Zhu Sha, are you not feeling alright?”

“Of course. They just left us there when danger came! If you weren’t there, I might have just died, right?”

Zhu Sha replied unhappily and continued.

“Why is it that girls need to be well-protected, as though they’re a precious

treasure or something; aren't women and men the same? It's just the appearance that's different!"

He shut off the Communication Charm before saying that. Perhaps, he didn't want to turn himself against everyone.

"Ah..."

Yue Tui suddenly didn't know how to respond to the question and so, hesitated. Because of his hesitation, Zhu Sha leaned closer and continued to ask.

"Could it be that you feel the same?"

Because he considered this a private conversation, Yue Tui also turned off group communication. "I think...men should be the ones to protect women, right? Men should assume more responsibility than women. I think it's better not to argue with women too much..."

If Fan Tong were here, he certainly would have inwardly praised Yue Tui's insight. One truly couldn't afford to offend women. However, the person with Yue Tui at the moment was Zhu Sha. When Zhu Sha heard Yue Tui's words, he became even unhappier.

"We are clearly the same person, but why is it easier to gain benefits when using the female appearance?" Zhu Sha asked himself.

"Eh? Female appearance, what...?" A confused expression was on Yue Tui's face, but Zhu Sha only stared at him strangely.

"Didn't you already see it when you first moved into the dorm?"

Yue Tui didn't make the connection even after Zhu Sha's prompt. Zhu Sha frowned and used image recognition directly to jog the other's memory. Yue Tui heard a small "*ping*" and saw mist envelop Zhu Sha. When the sound faded and the mist disappeared, a young woman sat where a young man had been before.

"_"

Frightened, Yue Tui wanted to retreat. However, they were in a tree, so there was nowhere he could run to. Zhu Sha, who had changed into a young woman, was not slightest bit uncomfortable as she leaned towards him. Her charming and beautiful face still resembled the young man's appearance, but the soft

body that was pressed against Yue Tui had an impressive chest, proving that this wasn't a hallucination. The person pressed close against him really was a girl, and a beautiful girl at that.



“I’m saying, didn’t you see my female appearance the first day you moved into

the dorm?” When Zhu Sha’s physical appearance turned into a girl’s, his voice had also changed into a girl’s softer tones. His personality also seemed to have changed slightly. “Hey, I want to see what you look like as a girl. Your female appearance is definitely beautiful, right? Will you change so that I can see?”

Not every person could switch between a male and female appearance at will, but Zhu Sha evidently didn’t know that. At that moment, Yue Tui finally remembered the “girl” he had seen in the shower. He was still shocked at Zhu Sha’s sudden transformation and being pressed so closely against a girl for the first time in his life. When he heard this kind of strange question, Yue Tui’s last thread of rationality snapped, and he wailed miserably.

“Waaaaaaaaah—”

In the same moment, far away at some unknown location, Fan Tong thought he suddenly heard Yue Tui wailing miserably, but he didn’t pay it any attention and treated it as merely his imagination.

Next: [Personal Account: Wei Shi](#)

Previous: [Chapter 6: Daily Routines](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translator: Saviesa, Nuddle

Proofreaders: VRVain, dinoj, Nannyn, XYZ81, PiKairi, Rose

My dear (亲爱的).

My dear little Yin Shi (音侍小亲亲).

My dear big brother (好哥哥).

Fan Tong couldn’t tell which character was used exactly, so he mistook it for something else

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

10 Comments so far:

1.  *aesya* says:

[January 31, 2016 at 2:39 pm](#)

wow, zhu sha must came from an advanced race that can change their gender at will. heshe also died from teleportation, must be very high leveled civilization.

[Reply](#)



2. *Alkanyseus* says:

[November 16, 2015 at 3:23 pm](#)

Wish it was updated more often...

Still thanks!

[Reply](#)



3. *Amiric* says:

[November 16, 2015 at 6:04 am](#)

So Zhu Sha was actually a girl?

More importantly, did Fan Tong die again?

Poor Yue Tui. He clearly didn't understand what's going on. (Me too).

Well anyway, thanks for the chapter!

[Reply](#)



4. *teckie* says:

[November 15, 2015 at 11:01 pm](#)

omg. OMG. what? i mean, what? what?

ok, i'm lost. what is he/she? is he/she human? and making advances on yue tui!! with a picture added!!! aaaaahhh !!! me mind hath dieth!!!!

anyway, thank you for this cliffhangery update! i'm gonna die here waiting for the next chapter. (also, i'm gonna die imagining yue tui as a girl xD wtf)

[Reply](#)

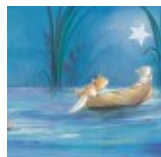


5. *carrot* says:

[November 13, 2015 at 10:05 pm](#)

UM, the last release was 3 months ago.....I hope nothing happened?
Here's some cookies as a incentive...

[Reply](#)



6. *orquidea_negra1* says:

[November 2, 2015 at 4:18 pm](#)

Thank you so much.

[Reply](#)



7. *hana* says:

[October 25, 2015 at 4:12 pm](#)

THE RELEASE HAS BEEN VERY FAST LATELY I WANT TO THANK THE STAFF
THAT HAS BEEN WORKING ON IT AND NOT ABANDONING THIS
MASTERPIECE

/Gives cakea cookies chocolates and hugs and kisses

[Reply](#)



8. *teckie* says:

[September 16, 2015 at 1:10 pm](#)

omg, ksm always makes me laugh like an idiot. i love ling shi and yin shi
both, and i have to say i can't really stop smiling after reading this update,
and i'm being stared at for being a weirdo :')

thanks for this unexpected update, GC!!! you've made my day~

[Reply](#)



9. *Midori* says:

[August 16, 2015 at 10:31 am](#)

Thanks!

Ahaha, and her past is revealed?! Well, i don't think the people there actually care much, lol. So funny about Ling Shi and Yin Shi!

[Reply](#)



10. *teckie* says:

[August 15, 2015 at 10:47 pm](#)

ahahahah my god, poor people. but i do feel i'm in live with yin shi,he's adorably idiotic.

but if i was a man, i'd hate him to death. (or enough to believe he's an idiot and go duel him, lol)

thank you for the translation, GC! : 'D

[Reply](#)

Personal Account: Wei Shi

On December 1, 2015, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhijiao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [9 Comments](#)

My name is Wei Shi—a name that I received after I became one of the Eastern City’s Five Attendants. This name is an indication of my status and authority. It is also the confirmation of my efforts, a fraction of all the accomplishments of my life. As for my original name, it’s honestly insignificant.

The Eastern City has five attendants, but I am very dissatisfied with the others who share my status. I am truly reliable and honest and have earned Her Majesty the Queen’s appreciation. Among the people who also possess this honorable title, some only appear reliable, while some are actually reliable, these two states being very different. Thus to me they are an eyesore—especially the one who doesn’t have even a shred of self-discipline, that barbarian who could never see the bigger picture.

My greatest wish is simply to be able to stand by Her Majesty the Queen’s side while advising her in making wise and farsighted decisions in order to turn the Eastern City into a perfect, ideal country—one with only good quality people and none of low quality. Everyone in the city looks up to the attendants, so in addition to being wiser than average, it’s also important to possess strength befitting our status. Hence, even though I continuously work hard in order to make this country a better place, I never forget to strengthen my body. I’ve done really well in this respect—so much so that other people can’t find a way to attack my weak point. Nevertheless, all these efforts are in order to strengthen my status in reality as well as in name.

Every day, besides thinking of ways to better the Eastern City, I also carry out my to make myself stronger than ordinary civilians. The fact that my tassel is still dark purple instead of light black makes me unhappy, but I don’t believe I’ve reached the limit of my strength. Perhaps the heavens are testing my patience. Surely one day I will have a breakthrough. This is another reason why I feel very annoyed with the “colleagues” who share my status.

Yin Shi and Ling Shi were already attendants when I assumed my position. At that time, their tassels were already the colors of the two highest levels: pure black and pale black. In my opinion, an unintelligent blockhead and a man who looks like a cross-dressing woman should not be able to become so strong. This is a matter that I simply can't accept.

Yin Shi goes out to play all day long, and Ling Shi follows after Her Majesty the Queen all day long. Shameless! They completely lack spiritual and mental strength. Why do they have the honor of wearing black tassels?

In order to uphold my philosophy, I dueled Yin Shi once. He only won because he got lucky. That's all! And yet he still dared to gloat about how he defeated me for three months. This is an intolerable disgrace. I won't ever acknowledge that he has the strength of a pure black tassel! He doesn't deserve it! Moreover, he even keeps on losing the tassel!

There must have been a mistake. The heavens couldn't possibly look favorably upon a childish barbarian. I feel that luck and miracles ought to be bestowed on people like me, people who have put forth honest and sincere effort. The heavenly laws should be perfect. How can the heavens make this kind of inexcusable mistake?

Even that androgynous lady-man is blessed by the heavens. If the heavens weren't unfairly biased, how could I lose a fight against him? Even if Ling Shi doesn't yell about how he defeated me every time he runs into me or even glances at me, he sneers mockingly at me, making me feel like I've suffered a great insult to my dignity. That's right. A grave insult.

Unfortunately, the honorable, beautiful, elegant Queen is unlikely to do anything to discipline them, no matter what they do. Even though I have tried many times to guide her into making the proper choice—to not allow those inadequate people to remain in Shen Wang Dian and to not permit those incapable people to keep their high status—Her Majesty the Queen remains unmoved, and I am unable to understand the reason why.

In the end, what kind of charm did they use to get Her Majesty to indulge them like this?

Setting aside the discussion on those two. That upstart child Hui Shi also

makes me unhappy.

Yin Shi and Ling Shi are two monsters that never age and should be considered demons that are outside the range of common sense, but Hui Shi was only an ordinary child that the Queen adopted. Why, oh why, was he able to obtain a light black tassel when he was no older than ten? He was only a commoners' child, nothing more. No matter how I look at the situation, he shouldn't have been anything special!

I never challenged Hui Shi to a duel. Even if I did look on him with dislike, bullying a child is not proper conduct; my self-respect would never allow me to do that. At least he was not a criminal. If he were a New Resident, of course I would have nothing good to say about him. He seemed loyal to Her Majesty, and he never did anything childish or unscrupulous. Even though he often opposed me on some government affairs, I still upheld that, as a Lord, I should show tolerance and forgive his ignorance.

What a pity that he later proved I'd made an error in judgment. No, I won't admit that it was my error. I was only deceived because Yin Shi and Ling Shi's shortcomings were too obvious, so I didn't really pay attention to the issues with Hui Shi. Of course, I'm unlikely to repeat this kind of mistake. In my lifetime, I won't allow this kind of stain to exist. As for my defeat at the hands of Yin Shi and Ling Shi, of course it was because I was hiding my true strength. Yes, that's absolutely what happened.

I'm dissatisfied with Luo Shi because he hasn't made much progress.

As the honorable Queen's only son, he should have inherited Her Majesty's firmness, decisiveness, ruthlessness, and formidable insight. On these points I've pretty much lost all hope. The fact that he does not look masculine isn't a problem, and his red tassel can't be called weak. Although he can read people, albeit with great difficulty, what can I do about his tendency towards excessive clemency?

A tendency towards excessive clemency is a weakness that a leader shouldn't have. In his body flows the noble blood of a prince, but his ideology is more or less the same as that of a commoner's—to forgive the unforgivable. I deeply believe that Her Majesty should put a little more thought in his education in

order to prevent a worthless, incapable ruler from coming to power in the Eastern City. While I am still alive, I don't want to see the Eastern City deteriorate, so naturally I will do everything in my power to prevent this kind of scenario.

Luo Shi's biggest problem is that he is untaught. Every time I try to earnestly advise him, he swallows hard or looks close to tears, and then Yin Shi says that I bullied him.

Is there no justice? I devote all my thought to the Eastern City's future. I only have good intentions. What good could come of associating with New Residents? They should be judged and are going to be judged. There's no need to become unnecessarily involved in their affairs!

Are the people living in Shen Wang Dian all blind or something? The other attendants are unable to manage people. Only Her Majesty the Queen is wise and knows to accept my insightful ideas. Otherwise, perhaps the Eastern City would have already fallen into disrepair. That the other attendants are able to live here lording it over me is all due to my efforts, but they still show me no courtesy, and they do not even support my philosophy. They are indeed biting the hand that feeds them by forgetting favors and violating justice. Fortunately, I have already seen through these people and know their true natures. Their minds are unlikely to be influenced much. Even though others are all so stubborn and difficult to control, I am still able to maintain my noble values, which is rather comforting and makes me feel, more than anything else, that I am shouldering a sacred mission that other people are unable to understand.

I have no friends. I have no friends because this world is filled with vulgar people, and I would have to pervert my sense of honor and lower my standards in order to make friends. That is too ridiculous! I will not try to conform to people who walk different paths. Honestly, it's unnecessary. Moreover, I would have to spend time with friends, which I think is wasteful. I ought to use my time doing things that have more meaning, such as thinking about the Eastern City's future or training.

I also have no lover. The reason I have no lover is more or less the same as the reason why I don't have friends. It might be possible for there to be some additional reasons, such as the fact that I have no emotion in my heart for a

lover. My heart and loyalty are already devoted to Her Majesty the Queen, so of course I have no need for a lover. I believe many people admire me, so it's a pity that I am unable to respond. Only the fact that I won't have any descendants makes taking a lover worth considering, but then I would have to find a woman who wouldn't weaken my bloodline. Till now I haven't found one.

As for family...

...

I feel like I've thought about something wrong just now. There are many more matters worthier of my attention.

Right now there are only four attendants in the Eastern City, but the two I dislike the most haven't disappeared yet, so my life isn't very pleasant at the moment.

Yin Shi always interrupts me, always contradicts me, calls me all sorts of discourteous things, and certainly says malicious things behind my back. Moreover, last time he even went so far as to rudely cut off my hair, which is absolutely unforgiveable!

Ling Shi is always at the Queen's side, and he appears to be very close to her. He lives in the fifth palace, the closest to Her Majesty's quarters, and he even attends to her when she changes clothes and bathes. This is scandalous! And clearly blasphemous towards Her Majesty, even if he is a sissy! How is it possible to loathe two people this much?

The matter of those despicable New Residents already perplexes me, yet these incompetent, willful colleagues of mine throw everything into disorder. Could it be that the heavens are testing me by fire?

And while we're on the subject of perplexing things, there is another matter that perplexes me.

I really don't go out often—or, should I say, I don't like to go out often—but there are still times when I must go out, and when I do, there are many opportunities to run into troublesome things. For example, when I turn a corner or stop at a curb, I might hear a strange sound.

"Meow—"

Some small, furry creature always appears when I least expect it.

“I don’t have any food.”

I have to resign myself to being cold. Whenever I’m working, I don’t bring food with me. Since snacks can be a person’s downfall, I don’t bring those kinds of things with me in order to keep myself from snacking.

“Meow, meow—”

That small animal can’t understand human speech, so even after I explain the situation, it still comes over to me and rubs against my legs. I crouch down – not to see it better, my legs have just grown tired from standing—then...

“Meow, meow—”

The small, furry creature will paw at me as if it wants to play. Its long fur and big eyes are so... No, it’s not cute. It’s definitely not cute! I never think that they’re cute. They clearly are not cute, right? Not cute!

“Meow meow?”



Then I'll take that (not cute) furry creature back to Shen Wang Dian. No, I don't do that. It's because they follow me. Of course I don't want to bring them home. I may not keep food on me when I'm working, but there is food at my home, and this has nothing to do with them. It's just that they come up to me, and if other people saw me turning my back on them, it would leave a bad impression, so I pick them up. Since I just happen to be going home, it's no trouble bringing them with me. That's all.

But this has happened too many times, causing my home to become filled with many pets with soft fur and beautiful eyes who depend on me... They're still not cute! I absolutely do not bring them home because they're cute. I've already explained my reasons, and of course it's not because I have sympathy for them. I have never felt that kind of emotion in my heart. After bringing them home, even though they're not cute, I can't drive them away. If I drove them away, they would just come back, and it is my policy not to do unnecessary things.

There really are too many of them. Anyway... the fourth palace is big. It doesn't matter since I have no friends and no lover. I don't want people to know that Wei Shi's pavilion has so many unlovable creatures, since it would ruin my reputation. I am someone who really values my reputation and dignity, so I can't allow these (not cute) creatures to destroy everything.

But occasionally one or two run off and hang around Shen Wang Dian. Whenever this happens, I am considerably perplexed. First of all, if they don't immediately come back to me, they won't have anything to eat... This doesn't worry me. It's just that the food I prepared would go to waste. Moreover, they already are not cute, so if they go hungry and become thin, then they will be even less cute. As far as I'm concerned, this is not a good thing.

Then, if I find them, I have to be very quiet about it, since I don't want people to see me bringing them back; that would be difficult to explain. I am someone who works for the Eastern City's future. The fact that these furry creatures take up so much of my time should be punishable, but I can't punish them by taking away their food, since that would make them thin and thus even more unlovable. I also can't hurt them, since injuries would also harm their appearance... but my heart still bears a grudge! If a better method of punishment existed, I would do it. Next time I'll definitely think of one!

Once, when one of them ran away, it ended up in Yin Shi's hands, and he took it away. I truly don't understand his animosity! Bullying me in my own home and taking away my pet... that unlovable creature!

Regarding that little creature he carried off, I can't forget it, and sometimes when I'm passing through the third palace, I definitely don't look for its shadow. In the end, what did Yin Shi do with it?

Compared to these matters, however, the most terrible situation is when I can't find them.

If I can't find them, I can't sleep for several days. This is some kind of unexplainable phenomenon. I don't even know why it happens, and it gravely influences my ability to work. When they die after living out their short lives, it's the same.

Why is it like that when they are not cute! Why do they disappear or die without permission! W-what about all the food I gave them! How could they be like this!

Trouble begets trouble, and I still have my work to consider. In short, every day is filled with troublesome matters, and only when I'm in front of Her Majesty the Queen do I feel happy. Anyway, I will continue to request that matters in the Eastern City follow my expected direction towards progress.

I hope Her Majesty's eyes will become even more discerning.

I hope Luo Shi will be able to reassure people more.

I curse Yin Shi and Ling Shi to suffer retribution.

...To my pet that Yin Shi kidnapped, as well as to my pets that have run away, quickly come back.

Next: [Character Profiles \(Yue Tui Version\)](#)

Previous: [Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don't Be Like This, Owner! Don't Run Away!](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translator: Saviesa
Proofreaders: VRVain, Sherry

Refers to Buddhism—religious practices meant to strengthen one’s spiritual/moral energy

← [Chapter 7: Owner, the Chickens Here...Don’t Be Like This, Owner! Don’t Run Away! Character Profiles \(Yue Tui Version\)](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

9 Comments so far:



1. *squinty* says:

[March 19, 2016 at 1:40 am](#)

Wei Shi is not cute at all! An unlovable creature. Even his picture isn't pretty, nor does it suit my fetishes!

....I feel like there is something wrong with what I said.

[Reply](#)

o *Jostena* says:

[May 26, 2016 at 5:58 pm](#)

You unknowingly told us about your faiths XD but yes I agree with all of that he is not cute at all definitely.... XP

[Reply](#)



2. *Mira* says:

[February 6, 2016 at 11:37 pm](#)

Oh woe is Wei Shi... a bachelor bound to be single for life... Eunuch anyone?

[Reply](#)



3. *aesy* says:

[January 31, 2016 at 2:49 pm](#)

this is a true cat lover – hating people and loving cats. who need humans when you can have cats?

[Reply](#)



4. *KT* says:

[December 7, 2015 at 6:30 am](#)

I think I'm in shock after this chapter!

[Reply](#)



5. *teckie* says:

[December 4, 2015 at 1:27 pm](#)

omg, yin shi is actually capable of catnapping an unlovable, awful and furry creature :c

and wei shi... ugh, y u do dis to meeee!! i dun' wanna like uuuu!!

and he's actually been an attendant for a shorter time than yin and ling!

on another note, whilst reading this, i wondered... just who is luo shi's father? :o? i don't thknk it's one of the attendants, but the boy's father has never been mentioned.

ahhh, i wish i was wei shi, and had a palace full to the brim with cats, till the point they actually overflow from it... ugh, paradise!

thanks a lot for the chapter! and the cliffhanger from the previous chapter persists!! >_<

[Reply](#)



6. *Amiric* says:

[December 3, 2015 at 2:50 am](#)

For someone to be so cruel and believes by doing so gonna help Eastern City... he's the worst. It's clear why everyone hate him. I hate him too, it doesn't matter if he likes cat or not. He's lucky that he decided not to have a

lover, because he's fate is to be single throughout his life.

[Reply](#)



7. *hinaten* says:

[December 2, 2015 at 1:22 am](#)

Wow. I never expected Wei Shi to be so...cute? lol. The last few sentences were adorable.

[Reply](#)



8. *Jennifer* says:

[December 2, 2015 at 12:26 am](#)

What is this witchcraft? C-could I possibly be beginning to actually like Wei Shi? No, this is impossible, he's still the awful man who sends New Residents to death without a fair trial.

...but he likes cats.

Gosh, next we'll find out that those blue-strings who bullied Fan Tong and Yue donate to charites and weave daisy crowns in their free time.

[Reply](#)

Character Profiles (Yue Tui Version)

On January 1, 2016, Posted by [a giraffe](#) , In [Chen Yue Zhi Yao](#), By [chenyuezhiyao,novels,shuiquan](#) , With [4 Comments](#)

Fan Tong:

This is the first friend I made in the Eastern City. Although he speaks strangely and sometimes spews bad words, he's still a good person. Being with him makes me feel extremely happy, and I want to do something for this friend of mine – especially since he seems to have a learning barrier, and his luck isn't too good. If I can help, I will certainly help as much as possible. I hope he will also consider me to be a good friend.

Luo Shi:

He is one of the Eastern City's five attendants and the Queen's son. I've heard many things about him, and I've heard that he's more or less a kindhearted person. He said he's always waiting for Hui Shi to return... I can't help him with this, but perhaps I can take care of him in place of Hui Shi? But with his status, does he really need me to?

Yue Tui:

This is... the current me. I am now a New Resident of the Eastern City, and it could be considered as... something fresh and new. Truthfully there are a lot of things that I don't know about the Eastern City, but fortunately, I don't have any problems with the spoken language, though I'm still learning the characters. I heard that "I" had stayed in the New Residents' temporary housing for a year and never came out. If everyone believes it, then I must have done so.

Zhu Sha:

Fan Tong's and my roommate in room 444. He is a serious person, very outspoken, and I would like to emulate his attitude towards studying. As for his attitude towards eating... not so much; I'm not at all envious of it. Compared to Fan Tong, I'm not close to Zhu Sha, but since we all live together, we should become closer in the future, right?

Bi Rou:

Regarding her, I don't want to mention much. She doesn't recognize me anyways. I admit that I'm very surprised to see her here... In short, I truly don't want to mention anything more. I'm sorry.

Mi Zhong:

I heard he's the tour guide that introduced Fan Tong to the Eastern City. I'm not really clear on what he's like since I've only seen him one or two times. Fan Tong said that he likes men; however, Fan Tong's words often can't be taken at face value, so which is it, actually?

Ling Shi:

One of the five attendants of the Eastern City and the rector of Fuzhou Xuan, he is responsible for handling the memories of the Eastern City's residents. He carries a pale black tassel. He's usually by the side of the Eastern City's queen. He is also extremely beautiful and... decisive? I don't have any particular thoughts about him; I only remember his utter hatred for the Western City's people.

Yin Shi:

One of the five attendants of the Eastern City and the rector of Shufa Xuan, he carries a pure black tassel. Because of the things I heard about him in the past, I was originally under the impression that he was a frightening person, but after meeting him, I discovered that this was not the case at all. I think his way of thinking is... unique. *Nn*, I'm not too fond of criticizing people, and as I'm actually a little prejudiced against him, let's just not speak about him.

Wei Shi:

One of the five attendants of the Eastern City, he is the substitute rector of Wushu Xuan. The impression he gave me is not a good one. I think he shouldn't treat New Residents the way he does. I've seen quite a few people who think like him and these people make me feel uncomfortable. But, it's extremely difficult to change one's ideology. It may be better to just keep my distance.

Hui Shi:

He was one of the five attendants of the Eastern City, the rector of WuShu

Xuan. Hmm... I know that that he has been missing from the Eastern City for two years, and I also know what happened to him, and where he'd gone... but I can't make myself tell Luo Shi. I feel really bad for this. It might be better if Luo Shi just forgets about him.

Xi Ying:

She is the Eastern City's Queen, and she carries a pure black tassel. The first time I saw the Queen was during Chen Yue Jie. I didn't get any profound impressions, but I'm afraid I can't adore her like all the other Eastern City's residents. However, it can't be helped...

Englar:

The Western City's Young Emperor. I also don't want to mention this name . But really, was it three million, three hundred thousand, or thirty thousand? I'm still very concerned about this...

Next: [Fan Tong's Foreword Volume 3](#)

Previous: [Personal Account: Weishi](#)

Return: [Main Page](#)

Translator: Saviesa

Proofreaders: PiKairi, dinoj, InkedSx

← [Personal Account: Wei Shi Fan Tong's Foreword](#) →

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Name *

Email *

Website

Comment

Post Comment

- ☐ Notify me of follow-up comments by email.
- ☐ Notify me of new posts by email.

4 Comments so far:

1.  Mira says:

[February 6, 2016 at 11:42 pm](#)

Thanks for translating this ! I can't wait to binge read the next volume :D
aha~~ Eager and patiently waiting ~~~~ Have a happy Chinese New Year!

[Reply](#)

2.  Ifb says:

[January 10, 2016 at 6:37 am](#)

I'm really liking the series so far. Thank you all so much! I'm looking forward to the future chapters! *already took a peek at some of the art in

later volumes*

[Reply](#)



3. *teckie* says:

[January 1, 2016 at 3:55 pm](#)

omg, this... only makes my theory about his identity into canon D:

about bi rou, maybe surprinsingly she was someone important in western city? since she even got to meet or see yin shi during the last war... and western city's view of yin shi comes as a surprise. frightening, huh. i can only think of him as something similar to what fan tong regards him, except i do like him being handsome~☆

and yet again the plot about hui shi thickens, and it's most likely that yue tui had something to do with this!

i have to say that when i read the chapter's title, i wasn't expecting much. normally, character introductions aren't done by a secondary character, i liked this one. and heck, this chapter revealed as much things as the whole of volume 2 xD

thanks a lot for the chapter! happy new year!!

[Reply](#)



4. *Amiric* says:

[January 1, 2016 at 3:21 pm](#)

Yue Tui is as polite as ever. I do hope we learn more about him, but nope, nothing. I really want to know why he hate Bi Rou, and his relationship with Hui Shi.

[Reply](#)